

# Proceedings OF THE American Society for Psychical Research

SECTION "B" OF THE AMERICAN  
INSTITUTE FOR SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH

VOL. I. PART III

## CONTENTS

### PART III.

Preliminary Report on the Trance Phenomena of Mrs. Smead. By James  
H. Hyslop, Ph. D., LL. D., etc.

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| 1. Introduction .....                         | 525 |
| 2. Development of Controls .....              | 535 |
| 3. Summary of the Record .....                | 543 |
| 4. Miscellaneous Incidents .....              | 568 |
| 5. Psychological Verisimilitudes .....        | 572 |
| 6. Conclusion .....                           | 580 |
| Confusions and Errors .....                   | 582 |
| Fragmentary Messages .....                    | 587 |
| Dramatic Play of Personality .....            | 590 |
| Detailed Record .....                         | 594 |
| Explanation of the Automatic Writing .....    | 720 |
| Cuts Illustrating the Automatic Writing ..... | 723 |

SMALL, MAYNARD & CO.  
15 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.

1907

PRICE, \$2.00

## NOTICES

Communications to the Editor should be addressed to Dr. James H. Hyslop, 519 West 149th St., New York, U. S. A.

---

Members are desired to report as to facts and personal experiences having an interest for psychology and psychical research, or to contribute to critical discussion of material collected and published on the subjects of concern to the Society. These subjects for which reports regarding facts are asked are Apparitions, Telepathy, Clairvoyance, Premonitions, Mediumistic Phenomena, Visions of the Dying, Coincidences, Illusions, Hallucinations, and all residual phenomena that tend to illustrate obscure mental processes.

All reports and narratives of personal and other experiences will be treated as private and confidential, unless express permission is given to use them and the names connected therewith.

---

### FISCAL YEAR AND MEMBERSHIP.

The fiscal year will begin January 1st of each year and all membership fees will become due at that time. New subscriptions shall become payable on election to membership. All fees paid during the year will entitle the member to enrollment for that year, except after November 1st. Fees paid after November 1st will entitle the member to enrollment for the following year.

---

Members are requested to send prompt notice of any change of address to the Secretary that there may be neither delay nor loss in the delivery of publications.

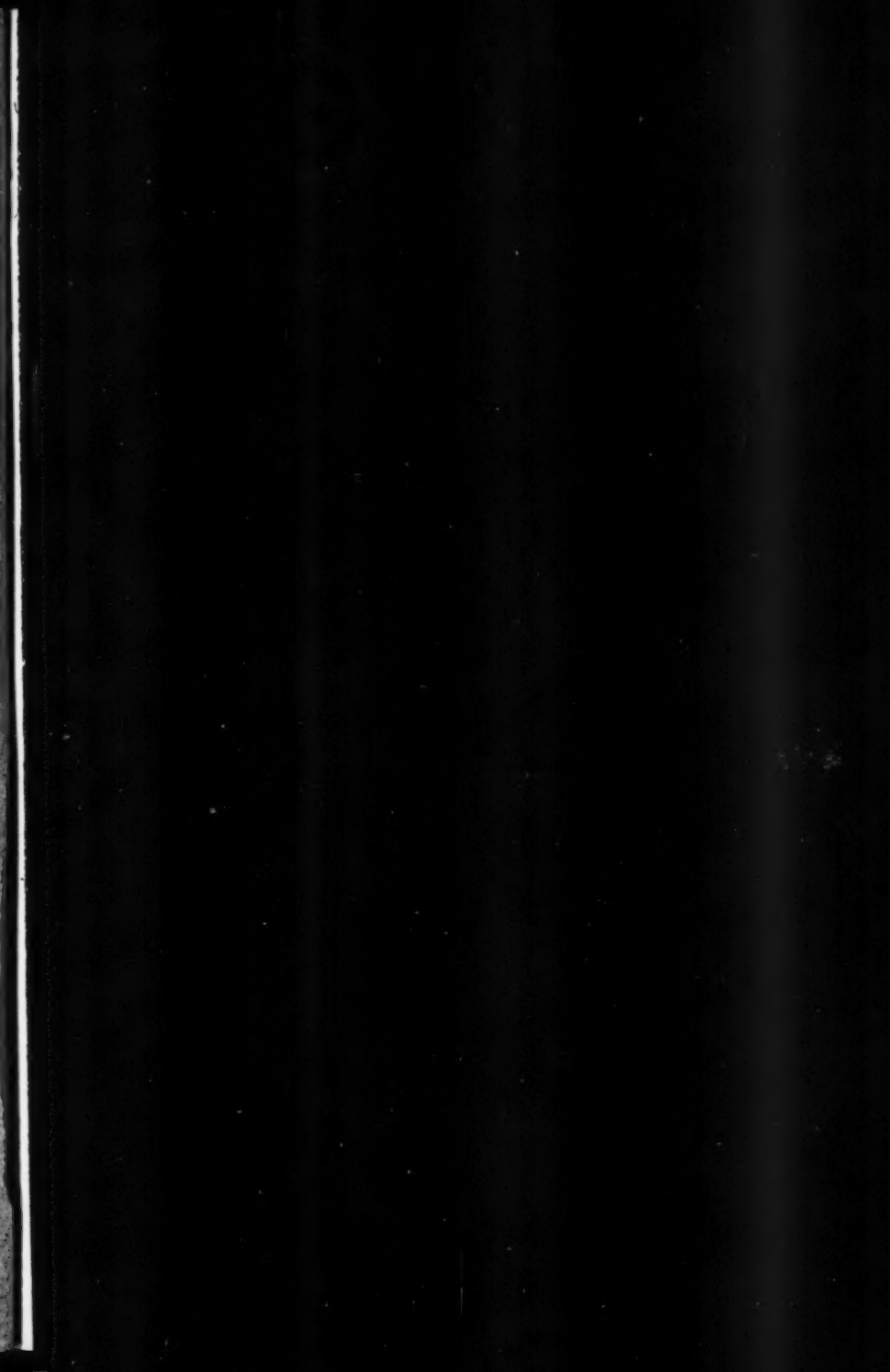
---

Foreign members of the Society may estimate their dues at the rate of £1. 1 s. for every \$5 of subscription fees.

---

Funds of the Institute, except those loaned on security, are deposited in the United States Trust Company, and can be drawn only on order of the Board of Trustees on the joint signature of its President and Treasurer.





v

=

p

v

s

s

c

t

a

f

h

d

s

t

t

a

o

p

n

b

f

f

t

d

PROCEEDINGS  
OF THE  
AMERICAN SOCIETY  
FOR  
PSYCHICAL RESEARCH

---

---

PRELIMINARY REPORT ON THE TRANCE  
PHENOMENA OF MRS. SMEAD.

By James H. Hyslop, Ph. D., LL. D., etc.

Introduction.

I propose here to give a brief account of some recent experiments in what I call the "Smead Case," which has developed into a matter of some interest to psychology and science generally. I came across it somewhat accidentally six years ago. I conceal the real names of the persons concerned under the pseudonym of Smead, as it will be obvious to all that it is at present prudent to withhold the names of an orthodox clergyman and his wife from publicity, and this for several reasons. In the first place they do not care to have any notoriety incident to this type of phenomena and desire only that they shall serve a scientific interest. In the second place, they wish to escape the annoyance incident to the personal importunities of that intolerable class which thinks that psychics exist only for its own selfish curiosity and personal satisfaction, to say nothing of the criminalities of newspaper reporters and editors. The time will come perhaps when no one need hesitate in the publication of his name in connection with experiences of the kind which will be the subject of this brief report, but until such persons are free from the injustice which the public is so willing to inflict, it will be necessary to practice some reservations in matters of this kind.

It was Mr. Smead who wrote me in 1900 of some incidents whose investigation in this city he wanted made and he

casually remarked that there was some interesting matter resembling the phenomena reported by Prof. Flournoy in his "From India to the Planet Mars." I at once seized the opportunities to make inquiries and soon unearthed a most interesting mass of psychological phenomena claiming to have the same character and meaning as those of Mrs. Piper.

The first type of these phenomena purported to be communications from deceased persons regarding the planet Mars. It is not the place here to outline them, as they will be the subject of later publication and discussion. They bear no indications of their truth in their character, and they are wholly lacking in the evidential quality which such claims must present. They are chiefly interesting to the psychologist and to those who may know that similar phenomena and claims once existed in the early history of the case of Mrs. Piper. The Martian episodes were followed by a personality which presented much better credentials superficially than anything previous in the history of the case for the theory that seemed plausible. But a little examination only showed that the alleged spirit, who called himself Harrison Clarke, could not prove his identity. This personality gave a detailed and sufficiently specific account of his earthly life, precisely as the alleged Dr. Phinuit Sciville had done in the Piper case. But like Phinuit also this Harrison Clarke could not prove his identity and left the hypothesis of secondary personality and unconscious fabrication stronger than ever.

When this Harrison Clarke was forced to give up the work which he was doing because he could not satisfy the demands of science that a spirit must prove his identity, the phenomena resumed their former character. There was no scientific evidence in the story of Harrison Clarke that he was what he claimed to be and he had to be treated in the same way that Dr. Phinuit was treated by Dr. Hodgson in the Piper case. This personality, Harrison Clarke, could neither prove his identity nor permit any one to communicate who might prove it. The consequence was that he had to be exorcised, so to speak, and the older order of things re-established, which meant that others who seemed to supply better evidence of the supernormal should be permitted to

continue the pre-existing regime. The outcome of this was a larger mass of facts that exhibited the right external characteristics, such as Harrison Clarke would not do, tho they were exposed to the objection that they represented facts which were known by Mrs. Smead. But they possessed in many respects a suggestive possibility that made further investigation imperative.

The consequence was that I brought Mrs. Smead to New York a few months afterward and had some experiments with reference to experiments conducted simultaneously by Dr. Hodgson with Mrs. Piper in Boston. Very little was effected by this. There were some correct statements made by the trance personalities in Mrs. Piper's case that indicated supernormal information, but no intercommunication was effected. As to the supernormal obtained through Mrs. Smead during this series of experiments, I obtained some facts which might have been treated as evidence under almost any other circumstances. But even if as a fact they were supernormal, which I am inclined to think that they were, the possibility of casual leakage of information in my house required me to wholly discount its evidential character. There was one fact, however, which cannot be discredited in this manner. In one of the experiments with Mrs. Piper, my father purporting to communicate gave me a pass sentence in a language which Mrs. Piper does not know and admonished me not to admit his presence anywhere unless I received that pass sentence. Dr. Hodgson was the only other person in the world who knew that sentence. In one of these experiments here in New York I received through Mrs. Smead a part of this sentence but not all of it. The language is one which Mrs. Smead does not know. This fact convinced me that there were possibilities in the case worth cultivating.

The result was the continuation of experiments under such circumstances as were possible at the time. These were such, however, that I could not properly test the case by the admission of strangers to sittings and by myself assuming the responsibility for Mrs. Smead's ignorance of the identity of persons so admitted. Hence the experiments in



the intermediate years were conducted almost entirely by Mr. Smead and the results have just as much value as the public might attach to his and Mrs. Smead's testimony and no more. While I learned to respect this testimony for the care and interest shown in stating exactly what the facts were, I recognized that scientific scepticism would not admit their importance and desired to have some experiments where I should be forced to accept the responsibility for their character. I was too well known by the Smeads to make any experiments of my own sufficiently crucial to meet the demands of scepticism and the opportunity did not open readily for the kind of experiments needed.

The death of Dr. Hodgson brought certain experiences to Mrs. Smead before she knew of his death and they offered some encouragement to further experiment. So I arranged to have a series of them under test conditions. These were to be that they should be conducted in New York under my direct surveillance and supervision and with the admission of entire strangers.

Mrs. Smead arrived in New York in accordance with a previous arrangement, on October 10th, 1906. Experiments began the next day. I had arranged to have present persons who were entire strangers to Mrs. Smead and also to all the members of my family. Not even my Secretary knew any of the sitters except the two who were her personal friends. The name of my Secretary was, of course, known to Mrs. Smead, having met her in my house where all the office work is done at present. But Mrs. Smead knew practically nothing else about her, save what the notes indicate and this never seems to have affected the contents of the messages. But other sitters were absolutely unknown to Mrs. Smead and to all others in my house. I myself met each sitter at the door and admitted them without mention of names. I received but two letters from sitters during the experiments and these I received personally and immediately locked them up in my iron box, to which I only had the key. I received four telegrams and only one of these had the real name of the sitter on it. But as I received all these telegrams personally from the messenger and immediately locked them up in my

iron box there is no reason for supposing personal knowledge by Mrs. Smead. I mentioned no names but Smith when I introduced sitters to Mrs. Smead. In fact in most cases I did not even introduce the sitter at all, having admitted him or her to the room after Mrs. Smead had gone into the trance. Before Mrs. Smead came out of the trance in each case I covered up the last sheet of the automatic writing, not allowing her to see any of it, and at once locked the sheets up in my iron box, so that at no time did Mrs. Smead obtain any normal knowledge of what she had written at a sitting.

Some years ago I had careful tests made for anaesthesia by two qualified persons, my family physician and Dr. Boris Sidis. The tests were severe and satisfactory. But I did not repeat any tests for anaesthesia on this occasion, being content to let the case rest upon the character of the "communications" and their relation to Mrs. Smead's normal knowledge. While at my house and during the experiments Mrs. Smead received no mail except letters from her husband, Mr. Smead, and a few of these I saw.

It savors of suspicion to write thus of the precautions, but in fact my knowledge and acquaintance with Mrs. Smead led me not to entertain any suspicions of detective methods in acquiring information: nor is there the slightest reason to suspect any efforts to deceive any one. But it is due to scientific scepticism to show that this possibility has been excluded as a means of proving partly our own alertness to this necessity and partly the difficulty of entertaining such an hypothesis in the case. These were the only reasons personally for applying so rigid a test. There were no reasons from Mrs. Smead's life and antecedents for exposing her to this scrutiny, but she, as well as I, wished to have these precautions applied as the means of removing all suspicion of her integrity and as a means of throwing that upon myself.

We must remember two important facts in the case which remove some of the simplest sources of suspicion. They are:

(1) Mrs. Smead has never been a public or professional psychic. She is the wife of a respectable clergyman and has never practiced automatic writing except in her own home

or with one or two of her relatives. No professional interest has ever been indulged in the work.

(2) Mrs. Smead receives no pecuniary reward for her sittings. She has never profited a cent for her work. On the contrary, it has cost her much time and inconvenience, and her husband as much time and work to make and keep the record. Mrs. Smead refuses absolutely to receive any pay for the experiments and wishes to use this gift in the service of the truth involved in the results. In the experiments recently performed I merely paid her travelling and living expenses, and she would not have permitted me to do this, if she had been able herself to do so.

Of course, I am quite aware that professional and mercenary motives are not the only ones which might lead to the commission of fraud such as is so frequently practiced by public mediums and adventurers. Hence we have not excluded the possibility of dubious methods when we have removed the mercenary motive. But the most important suspicions are removed by our being able to say that neither professional nor mercenary interests had ever been served by her work. While this may make it necessary in the present stage of the investigations to take those precautions which exclude the possibility of fraud, if only for impressing a class of people who will not think as intelligently as they might, we have to be on the alert for very different difficulties in all such cases. These are associated with subconscious mental processes and the unconscious use of casually or otherwise acquired information which may simulate the supernormal without being chargeable to conscious dishonesty. Of this Mrs. Smead has been aware, and has been as desirous as any one could be that this source of doubt should be excluded as well as any of the simpler resources of scepticism.

But if we exclude the simpler forms of fraud we have a situation in which the critic must advance evidence for any other type that he chooses to suppose. The precautions taken exclude the ordinary methods of getting information and if the facts suggest supernormal sources we may test any hypothesis which they intimate in the appropriate way. That is all that I shall claim for the experiments which I

here publish and discuss. The report of the earlier experiments is too long to be even summarized here, and while it undoubtedly contains some facts of a supernormal character, they are evidentially so few in number, compared with the mass of non-evidential, that it would not serve a useful purpose in the present stage of public interest to publish them, or even to summarize them. Hence I am publishing the present series as containing results which have better credentials for their exemption from the ordinary objections than previous experiments which depend so much upon the testimony of Mr. and Mrs. Smead for whatever character they have. Besides I am not insisting that any special theory shall be proved by them. They are rather evidence of the need for further experiment than proofs of any large theory. All that I pretend to have established is the presumption that we are dealing with exactly the same kind of phenomena as have been under observation in the case of Mrs. Piper. That is the primary excuse for the publication of this series of experiments, and they ought to be suggestive enough to invite the proper scientific interest. I am willing to suggest an hypothesis to account for the phenomena, but only as itself first suggested by the mass of evidence accumulated in the Piper case and simply confirmed in its character by the results of experiment with Mrs. Smead.

If I may indulge for the moment certain suppositions of fraud I think they would have to be limited to two. (1) We may suppose that Mrs. Smead obtained previous knowledge of the sitters and their lives, with appropriate incidents for representing the existence of communicating spirits. (2) We may suppose that she received hints and suggestions from sitters and so built up the material which appears as messages from the deceased. We can hardly propose a third supposition represented in secondary personality, since the facts are not memories of Mrs. Smead's normal experience, unless we assume previously acquired knowledge by normal means. The presence or exclusion of this alternative will be determined by the view we hold regarding the first supposition.

In regard to the second supposition, namely, that of hints

and suggestions, it is answered by reference to the records. The records were so carefully made and kept that we have in them all that occurred on the occasion. The reader can judge for himself how many suggestions were made or not made by the sitter.

In regard to the first supposition, namely, that of previously acquired knowledge of the sitters. I can only say that it is the duty of him who assumes this to make it intelligible under the circumstances and to give adequate evidence for his hypothesis. As I have pointed out above, Mrs. Smead was not only under my own surveillance in my own house, but had no means whatever of knowing whom I had invited to take sittings. In six of the cases there was not even any correspondence which could have been obtained by her. In such cases as were affected by correspondence the letters were received by me personally and locked in an iron box of which I alone had the key. In none of these letters was anything more than the name of the writer that was relevant to sittings and in some cases the real name was not signed, nor was there anything in most cases even referring to sittings. But granting that access to the letters was possible, which was really not the fact, they would not account for the kind of information communicated. This would have had to be obtained previously to the arrangements for the sittings and in some cases I did not myself know three days ahead whom I should have and in some cases arranged for the sittings personally. No hypothesis of previously acquired knowledge can be advanced without assuming my own complicity in the results, and I have no means of refuting that assumption.

In my own conviction there are two suppositions that may be discussed. The first is chance coincidence and guessing, whether subliminal or supraliminal, on the part of Mrs. Smead, and the second is that of supernormal knowledge which we may describe as we please. In narrating the facts of the record I shall leave the choice of an hypothesis to the reader. I do not think that either hypothesis has any importance, especially that we have a trance condition to consider, and tho we may well imagine guessing to be a capacity



of subconscious mental processes as well as the conscious—and I admit its possibility—the whole force of the assumption of guessing comes from its relation to normal consciousness as we know the habit in guessing mediums. It is a form of conscious deception. Unconscious guessing is a new form of the phenomenon, or at least a separate problem, and in comparison with conscious guessing a wholly innocent thing. But as we cannot suppose unconscious guessing to be capable of effecting any better success than conscious guessing, or that it employs any other mental methods, we can safely measure its importance in the case by the nature of the facts. If guessing of any kind can explain them it matters not whether we call it conscious or unconscious, but in this case we shall have to reckon with unconscious rather than conscious guessing, if we assume the trance condition, which I do after adequate investigation of the case. Of this point again. But as the facts show that guessing is out of the question as an hypothesis to explain all the phenomena, we have to deal with some form of intelligence suggesting the supernormal, whatever the source of it.

The existence of the trance was established several years ago by tests which I have already mentioned. On this occasion I did not repeat these tests for anaesthesia, not caring whether Mrs. Smead was in a trance or not, as my primary object was to shut out previous knowledge of the sitters. There is no reason for investigating the trance except to settle the claim that it exists. If a medium claims that she goes into a trance it is important to determine that fact. Otherwise it makes no difference in such experiments whether psychics are in a trance or not, provided we take adequate means for excluding previous knowledge of the sitter. I of course have evidence of the trance at the recent experiments, but it is not the sort that represents the ordinary psychical tests, and so I shall lay no stress upon its existence in the case, especially as I do not care whether it exists or not.

I have dwelt on these aspects of the matter, including that of fraud in any of its forms, not because I regard it as a matter of importance in this case, but only out of deference

to a persistent habit on the part of certain minds which cannot appreciate any other point of view, even after telepathy has been established and after the admission that other forms of the supernormal have been proved. It seems necessary to spend time on this aspect of the problem just to show that it has been carefully considered, and were it not for this fact I should have dismissed it with a formal statement. Mrs. Smead's habits of life and her place in the community are all against her use of suspicious methods, and the absolute privacy of her work deprive critics of the right to raise the ordinary objections. They must make themselves responsible for the particular difficulty which they entertain regarding such cases. The only obligation which rests upon us is to show the circumstances under which the phenomena occur and then let the critic explain the facts in any way he pleases, provided he supplies the evidence that his hypothesis is true.

I am not concerned at present with any special hypothesis involving the supernormal and its complete explanation, but only with the exclusion of the most simple natural theories in such cases. In certain specific instances of the record I should admit the applicability of ordinary explanations. But unless the same hypothesis will apply to the whole they will not be the subject of serious consideration in any but the particular incidents to which they may be supposed applicable. It is all very well to show our acuteness by pressing ordinary objections, but in doing so we must see that we are not ignoring facts to which such criticisms do not apply. It is the total result that we have to explain by some one hypothesis with such subsidiary explanations as naturally articulate with it and are suggested by the circumstances, or by what we know in normal and abnormal psychology. It is the crucial facts that must determine our theory, and whatever discount we make for vulnerable incidents we cannot escape the obligation to gauge the problem by the strongest incidents in the record and their collective character. I shall not myself shirk the duty to make due allowance for all facts which are amenable to explanation by ordinary agencies, and shall not resort even to telepathy until the facts require something which goes at least as far as that supposi-

tion. We have first to exhaust fraud, suggestion, and secondary personality or subconscious mental action of the psychic before admitting anything whatever of a supernormal nature. This is a truism, but I mention the fact simply to emphasize the circumstance that I regard these hypotheses as much stronger than telepathy, or if not stronger, as entitled to the first place in the consideration of any problem like this. Telepathy I do not regard as a serious rival of the only other supernormal theory possible in such cases. It will do for those who are trying to appear scientific in the presence of those who can keep straight faces in such a situation, but it has, in my mind, no real competitive power in the field with suggestion, guessing, detective fraud, and secondary personality. I shall feel it easier to consider the rationality and applicability of these familiar explanations than to accept that of telepathy in the case.

The sittings, the reader will observe, are quite unequal. Some are entire failures and some are notable successes. This fact can be remarked in its place. It is an incident, however, which is worth mentioning in this connection as indicative under the circumstances of a genuine psychological interest in the phenomena, whatever their explanation. There are all grades of excellence from the non-evidential to the completely evidential incidents, including those which strongly suggest or exhibit the influence of the medium's mind upon the "messages" and those which are on the borderline of proof. In other words, the record shows that variation which we should most naturally expect on the assumption of its real psychological importance in so complicated a problem. The fact can be remarked in its proper place when we come to deal with individual instances of the sittings.

### **Development and Controls.**

The early history of the case showed no persistent control until the appearance of Harrison Clarke. The earlier communicators exercised their own "control," so to speak. They were first deceased children of Mr. and Mrs. Smead. A friend by the name of Maude L. Janes appeared once or

twice to communicate, and then a deceased brother of Mr. Smead, who seemed afterward to be a frequent control. It was he, with two of the children of Mr. and Mrs. Smead, that were responsible for the Martian episodes in the case. It was their control that was interrupted by the sudden and unexplained appearance of Harrison Clarke. Up to the time of Harrison Clarke's appearance Mrs. Smead had done her automatic writing with the planchette. She had begun this in childhood, under the suggestion of her father, who was interested for awhile in these phenomena, and tho she did not continue experimenting with it for many years, when her interest and that of Mr. Smead arose later, the planchette was the method employed, and apparently she could not successfully write with a pencil. But the appearance of Harrison Clarke was marked by the ready use of the pencil soon after he assumed control. He excluded the presence or influence of all other communicators, and tho he showed a remarkable facility in the writing, using normal, inverted, and mirror writing with equal capacity, he was not able to prove his identity. Nor would he allow others to do this through him, as in the Piper case is done by the trance personalities there. The consequence was that Harrison Clarke had to be asked to abdicate, which he did with some reluctance, after stating that he had been sent there for the purpose of effecting certain results which he did not explicitly explain. But as soon as he disappeared, in accordance with his own statements about the writing, the planchette had to be resumed, as Mrs. Smead apparently could not write with the pencil at all under any other control. It was apparent that his function was to develop automatic writing with the pencil and to eliminate the planchette. But for a long time after his disappearance the planchette was the only means of securing automatic writing.

Harrison Clarke's place was taken largely by Mr. Smead's brother, who was the most frequent communicator, perhaps, after the disappearance of the former. But he did not usurp exclusive control. The communicators varied and were very numerous, consisting almost entirely of deceased friends of Mr. and Mrs. Smead, and thus depriving the results of evi-

dential value. There was no really single control for several years. By this, of course, I mean the dominating influence of one personality either directly affecting the communications or indirectly influencing them. This continued until April, 1902, when an important change took place in the phenomena.

In April, 1902, the chief trance personality in the Piper case, Imperator, had signified to Dr. Hodgson, through the automatic writing of Mrs. Piper, that he would investigate the case of Mrs. Smead. I carefully concealed this fact from the Smeads. Soon afterwards there began to be indications of a change of control. This was simultaneous with the desire of Mrs. Smead that, if she was to continue in this work, it should be done consistently with her religious view of the matter. There was an interval at this point which was quite barren in results of any supernormal kind, either in reality or appearance, but it was apparent from the detailed record that some kind of a mental change was going on. Finally the name of "Luther," later said to be "Martin Luther," was printed in capitals, as proper names are often treated, nearly always if asked for, in the Piper case. I found that in 1896 or 1897 the name of Luther was associated with the Imperator group of trance personalities in the Piper record of those years, a fact which was as unknown to me as to Mr. and Mrs. Smead, the records indicating it having never been published. Soon afterwards Mrs. Smead saw a vision of the cross, which is the sign of Imperator in the Piper case. This fact, of course, was known to Mrs. Smead, as it had been a subject of conversation between her and Mr. Smead, who had read my Report on Mrs. Piper, published in 1901. The vision of the cross occurred several times and was finally written by the planchette in the same way that it is written by Mrs. Piper. A little later the name of "Luther" was repeated and in connection with it that of St. Augustine, and finally that of Gustavus Adolphus. Mrs. Smead could not recall any knowledge of Gustavus Adolphus and did not know what the name meant until it was explained to her by Mr. Smead. It is quite probable, however, that she at one time knew what his place and associations in history were.



The next day apparently an allusion was made to Stain-ton Moses, the English clergyman who had been a "medium" and who had died in 1892, and his name has figured in the experiments with Mrs. Piper since that time on various occasions. In the midst of these, and in the experiments with Mrs. Smead, the name of "Chesterfield" was given, with some allusion to his manorial property or home in England, but no reference was made to his being the well known Lord Chesterfield, and there are no characteristics in the personality of this alleged communicator that would identify him with that celebrated man. In response to a question of Mr. Smead, "Chesterfield" claimed, or apparently claimed, to be *Prudens*, one of the trance personalities in the Piper case. Two weeks later an apparent attempt at the initials of Emperor's signature were given. They are initials of words that signify his function in this work, he being the chief of the controls in the Piper case. They have adopted the letters "U D" to symbolize the word "understand" as an abbreviation of it, in the automatic writing. On one occasion in the Smead case, a little later than the above incident, the symbol "U D" was used in the proper manner. I was present at the experiment when this occurred for the first time, and it had all the fitness of being adjusted to the understanding of the only person that might be expected to interpret it without explanation.

In the meantime, several prayers occurred which were identical in character with the Emperor prayers in the Piper case, but without showing an exact production of them. The thought and language were the same, extending to the use of "thee" and "thou" as in the Piper case, but deviating in certain special words from the practice there. The manner of arranging for sittings and the use of the term Sabbath became the same as recorded in that Report. Mrs. Smead had carefully abstained from reading it, at least in her normal consciousness, and the volume had been tied up tightly in paper and remained on the shelf for more than six months and during this whole development of the apparent Emperor control. But Mrs. Smead had heard the Emperor prayers read and the whole subject of my Report had been

talked over between her and Mr. Smead, who had read my Report carefully.

This simulation of the trance phenomena in the Piper case was so striking and it so apparently repeated some of the incidents in the history of that case, that I resolved to put the matter to a conclusive test. I therefore arranged for three experiments with Mrs. Smead, *without telling her or Mr. Smead what my object was*. Simultaneously I arranged with Dr. Hodgson for him to have one sitting with Mrs. Piper simultaneously with one I was to hold with Mrs. Smead. My plan was to put the apparent claim to the presence of the Imperator group to a test by interchanging messages with Dr. Hodgson, a feat which should apparently be perfectly possible on the assumption that they were spirits in both cases. My first sitting was on Monday morning. Dr. Hodgson's with Mrs. Piper was to be on Wednesday morning, coincident with mine on the same day.

When I began the experiment on Monday morning with Mrs. Smead, she soon went into a deep trance. "Chesterfield," who had apparently now become the regular control, as the representative presumably of the Imperator group, was on hand, and I explained to him what I wanted, namely, the taking of a message to another "light," but not mentioning Mrs. Piper by name. I named the third day, Wednesday, as the date when I wanted the message taken. I did not intimate that I wanted any brought to me in return. In response to my request, "Chesterfield" at once replied, through the automatic writing, that Martin Luther would take it for me. When Wednesday came, after the usual preliminaries with "Chesterfield," Luther reported ready for his mission, and I sent a message to Dr. Hodgson, but without naming him, saying simply that I wanted it delivered to the "other light," the term used by the trance personalities in the Piper case for "mediums." In a few minutes, my father purported to return from Dr. Hodgson, naming him, with a message, and I sent another through him to Dr. Hodgson. Then Mr. Myers purported to be present ready for a message on the same mission, and I sent one to Dr. Hodgson through him. He soon returned with a communi-

cation again from Dr. Hodgson, but as Mrs. Smead was coming out of the trance it was not delivered, and after the experiment she lay down on the sofa and had a short sleep. In it she dreamed of the presence of Mr. Myers. The next day at the experiment, Mr. Myers purported to be present and apparently tried to deliver his message. But the experiment was a failure, the writing being so difficult and confused that nothing intelligible was written. The experiment on Tuesday had also been a similar failure. We must remember, however, in all this that Mrs. Smead's normal consciousness had not been informed of what I had planned or was doing, but the adjustment of the automatic writing to my design was perfect. Now for the sequel.

When Dr. Hodgson was interrogated for what had transpired at his end of the line it was found that *he had received no messages from me, had sent none to me, and that the trance personalities in the Piper case had been in complete ignorance of what I was doing, so far as the record shows.* It would thus appear that we have as complete proof as might be desired that the whole Emperor impersonation in the Smead case was a product of secondary personality. It is true that we had not had sufficient real evidence of their actual presence and that the little that had occurred should not suggest more than the duty of investigation. But this result of the experiment, tho there was no direct claim that the Emperor group were active in the work of three days, shows what the resources of secondary personality may be, regardless of the question whether the Emperor trance personality was simulated or not. The intensity of Mrs. Smead's interest in the religious aspect of the problem for her and in the Emperor group of trance personalities with their apparently religious view of the work had probably had the effect of setting her subconscious mentality into action and of stimulating it to the production of the whole affair, and it seemed equal to the complicated process of adjusting the action to the situation which I had concealed from her normal consciousness. At least this is the most natural interpretation of the facts which showed so conspicuous a failure to realize the evidence of supernormal action. When informed later of the result, Mrs.

Smead was so disappointed with it that she at first resolved never to have anything to do with further experiments of any kind, but was finally induced to continue them for the sake of ascertaining what such phenomena might mean. But there was no further attempt to simulate the Emperor influence, if we assume that it was such a simulation that was intended in the first place.

But "Chesterfield" continued to act as control, and he maintained the same characteristics and style which had appeared in this apparent representation of Emperor, so that it is just as possible that we should never have imagined that it was even an unconsciously intended representation of Emperor. "Chesterfield" still continues to be the body-guard of Mrs. Smead, and sustains the same characteristics which describe the trance personalities in the Piper case, tho no evidence of his real identity has been submitted. He is not prominent in all experiments, but appears at opportune occasions to show his general relation to the case. He does not seem to directly intermediate in the communications, but to serve as a general safeguard against promiscuous interference with the case. The appearance is that of a watch against indiscriminate communicators who may not understand the process of using the "light" without injury to it.

During this period my father purported to be an important factor in the development of the case from the "other side." He has persisted in experimenting with the case until he seems at times to act as a control. But this is apparent mainly when I am present or a request is made that he be present to assist a friend whom I may have sent for a sitting. The dominant influence is "Chesterfield," tho he does not direct and control communications affecting problems of identity.

This is the condition of things at the present time. In the early history of the case there was no such systematic appearance of regulation and intelligent care of the conditions affecting communications. But for some reason the whole psychological machinery at present is identical with that of the Piper case, and the detailed records, especially the original automatic writing, will show evidence of this fact. This

is not the place to indicate the *minutiae* of this circumstance, but I think readers of this and the Piper records will remark definite indications of what I say in the "changes of control" marked in the detailed accounts. The careful management of such phenomena was not noticeable in the earlier sittings, and only when my father purported to make persistent efforts to develop the case and explicit statements were made that the "Greater Light," Emperor presumably, was an advisor in the direction of the experiments, did evidence of a new method of conducting the sittings on the "other side" make its appearance, and the further simulation of the Piper phenomena become manifest. Tho we have to assume that this also is a feature of secondary personality, and from the apparent resources of the case in this phenomenon the conjecture becomes a most plausible one, yet there is a verisimilitude about it that is not so easily attributed to fabrication of any kind. The correct statements made by the same communicators through two other reliable mediums about the difficulties attending communication in the Smead case, are suggestive of some other source than secondary personality for this peculiar psychological character of the controlling process under this new regime, so to speak. They have known absolutely nothing about the Smead case, so that the statements about it by these two other psychics seem to represent correct supernormal information. But not to press evidence which is not adequate to prove the matter, the phenomena certainly indicate superficially a genuine process of development toward a rational system of management, and we need not decide a controversy about its real character, so long as other phenomena indicate the existence of supernormal information.

I have spoken of the controls as if assured that they are what they claim to be, but I do not mean to beg any questions by this. There is no satisfactory evidence, for instance, that "Chesterfield" is a spirit, and from what has been said of the apparent presence of the Emperor group's influence, the evidence is much less for their reality in this case. But we shall gain nothing by circumlocutions which conceal the actual appearance of things, and hence we shall form much



clearer ideas of the phenomena if we speak of them in their own terms. Even if the "spirits" are not real, even if the ostensible claims are not what they purport to be, it is highly important to realize just how apparent the reality is. Of course, it is possible that the claim to the presence of some representative of a spirit world is defensible, or may be at some future time when we know more about this subject, but all this does not justify believing it without adequate evidence. The Piper case, both in respect of the quality and quantity of the evidence, has set the standard for estimating the claims of the supernormal in the direction of spirits, and hence we cannot accept the claims made in such cases as this without some measure of assurance that the limits of secondary personality have been transcended. But this duty does not interfere with the right to describe the phenomena in their own terms, especially when we require as much to represent and appreciate their approximation to really independent intelligence as we do to suspend our judgment.

Some object that this policy creates a tendency to accept the claim when it should be resented. The complaint is that we cannot resist the psychological influence of speaking of their reality and so come to believe it without sufficient evidence. This, however, is the fault of the person who does not control his own thinking. Besides it is quite as possible that the habit of using circumlocutions to avoid the representation and apparent reality of spirit presence may follow the same psychological law away from the actual facts. The prejudices are not all on the side of belief. They are precisely the same prejudices on the side of doubt. Truth is no more presumptively on the side of scepticism than on that of belief, so that circumlocution is as dangerous in one place as another. The primary duty is intelligence.

#### **Summary of the Record.**

This record consists of two types of phenomena. The first is represented by the sittings which are experiments and the second by experiences which occurred spontaneously at other times in the intervals. The first type was obtained through automatic writing, the second through visions or

apparitions and impressions. They articulate more or less together, and when they do not seem to articulate they are at least a part of the psychological conditions affecting the results in the experiments. The record places them in their chronological order. Very few of the spontaneous incidents will require mention in the summary, as they do not always involve a systematic connection in meaning with the experimental data. An epitomized account of the sittings is all that is necessary for the general reader who may find the detailed record too tedious and confusing. I give the summary in the order of the experiments.

I would, however, advise the critically inclined reader to study carefully the detailed record. He will often find little incidents and points mentioned in the notes that may have more interest and significance than the apparently more striking phenomena which I mention in the summary. There is no space in this account for the general reader to take note of all the significant incidents in the communications. The critical student will find them imbedded in the detailed record and such notes of them made as will render them intelligible.

I held a few of the first sittings as a means of adjusting Mrs. Smead to experiments in new surroundings. Mrs. Smead had arrived the night before the first of these, which was held in the forenoon of October 11th. Nothing of importance occurred. Allusion to the effect of travel was made which I took as a hint to let Mrs. Smead rest for another day or two.

The next sitting was held on the 15th. My wife, who died in 1900 and who has been a frequent communicator, apparently, through Mrs. Smead and other psychics, purported to communicate on this day. Almost the first thing that she announced was the early death of her father, who had been in ill health for some years. This fact was wholly unknown to the Smeads. I myself knew nothing about the critical condition of my father-in-law at the time of the sitting. He had incurable difficulties for years, but was able to continue business, and I did not know at this time that he was especially ill or that he was, in fact, on his death bed, which events proved it to be. The message which I have men-

tioned was received, apparently from my wife, at about 11 A. M. The next morning I received a letter from Mrs. H., wife of my father-in-law, written at noon and telling of his condition, which was clearly dangerous. The letter was locked up in my iron box and no one told of the information.

My wife made a reference to music and then indicated that we used to sing hymns together, as if she were trying to prove her identity to me, in a situation of some interest to both of us. Mrs. Smead knew that my wife was a musician, but she knew nothing whatever of the fact that we used to sing hymns together on Sunday afternoons. We might treat the hit, however, as a subliminal guess. An allusion was made to what she thought she ought to have done before she died and which was made clearer in April of 1907, when I heard from my father-in-law himself through the same source. I conjectured at this time what was meant, but the language was so general that no one else would suspect its meaning.

In connection with the prediction of my father-in-law's death, several pertinent allusions were made which strengthened the evidence of supernormal information. The communicator referred to his worrying about his home affairs and said that he should not have any cares at this time. The pertinence of this cannot be appreciated without a knowledge of matters which are too personal and private to mention.

I tried a second sitting in the evening of the same date, but nothing evidential came of it. On the next morning Mrs. Smead reported a vision in the night, which was a fair description of my wife when I met her on her return from Germany, before we were married, and which also contained a very clear description of her home when I visited it a few weeks later. The detailed record will give the particulars (p. 602).

The next sitting, which was on the 16th, my wife alluded, clearly enough, in my understanding, to a project which I was seriously contemplating, but which is, perhaps, too personal to detail here, especially as the manner of alluding to it would not appear evidential to an outsider. It was mentioned, however, in the previous spring by Dr. Hodgson

through Mrs. Piper spontaneously in a very clearly evidential manner and of course was absolutely unknown to Mrs. Piper. Only two other living persons knew of it. The circumstance of its mention through Mrs. Piper made it clear to me what was meant in this instance, which I could not make evidential partly because it was too general in the form of allusion and partly because it might have been inferrible from normal guessing on the part of Mrs. Smead. The circumstances rendered it improbable, but I cannot attach importance to this.

On October 17th my wife, among other things less significant, mentioned our bringing things home from Switzerland, which was true. But as it is possible for Mrs. Smead to have conjectured this from the few trinkets lying about the house, I cannot attach as much weight to it as I might otherwise have done, tho I do not myself know a single Swiss article exposed to view in the house, all of them, so far as I know, being locked up out of sight and inaccessible.

In the sitting of October 22nd my wife again alluded to her father and asked me if I thought he was coming soon. On my affirmative reply, for I now knew his illness, she went on to say that she and her mother were watching him carefully and said that he would come to me as soon as he passed out and admit his mistake in not believing in the communications.

In order to show the pertinence of all this and also to strengthen its character, perhaps I should introduce some other results obtained through three other mediums and also some occurring in connection with myself and members of my family.

On November 27th, 1906, I held a sitting which was one of a series with a private person, wife of a physician in a large city a hundred miles from where my father-in-law lived. She had never heard of him, and her husband had been brought into communication with me in the summer by the discovery of his wife's mediumistic powers. At this sitting which was the last of the series, I deliberately asked the communicator, who purported to be my father, how my wife's father was, and the answer, in automatic writing, was

that he was not well and was old and feeble and would not last long. In a tone of voice expressing surprise I asked further what the matter was and received the reply: "He has rheumatism, his lungs are diseased, and all the vital organs affected." I then asked if he had been ill recently and received the reply, "Yes, about six weeks ago he was dangerously ill," and after a prediction of six months for his life it was spontaneously stated that his mother Gretchen would be glad to see him. All this, I repeat, came in automatic writing.

The facts are these. He had been seized with the critical attack just six weeks before, and no one thought he would survive at the time. The physicians expected him to live at least six months. He was suffering at the time of these communications with cardiac asthma, oedema of the lungs, and the intestinal canal refused to do its work, while he had for years suffered from rheumatic gout. His mother's name was Margaret, of which the German diminutive is Gretchen. I had never known her name and learned from him on my way home when I called to see him.

When I returned to New York I found that my Secretary had put on record the fact that my servant with her companion had, the night previous, seen me walk up the steps into the house carrying my bag. Both signed the record to this effect. This report was made because, in the morning, finding the storm doors open, which I am always in the habit of closing, the servant asked if I had returned, and on finding that I had not, felt frightened and told her story. It was about 10 P. M. they saw me. It was just about this time that I was entering the residence of my father-in-law in Philadelphia.

On the night before his death this same servant was awakened between midnight and 1 A. M., having looked at the time, hearing my father-in-law coming up stairs and calling my little boy by name. This was put on record in the morning before we received any word of his death. He died at 9.30 A. M. and I received a telegram at 12.30 P. M. telling me of the fact. I was at lunch when the telegram came. I mentioned the nature of the telegram at the lunch table im-

mediately, and we came upstairs in a few moments. As soon as my Secretary stepped into the room where our work is done she started back frightened and said she saw a man (apparition) there. I asked her to describe him and I took notes of her statements, and recognizing a description of my father-in-law, I told her to go into the parlor and look at his photograph on the wall, which she did, recognizing the *fac simile* of the apparition. She had said in her account, however, that he was frightened.

I ascertained from the nurse in Philadelphia that about 1 P. M. the night before he died he was delirious and frequently called for my little boy by name, of whom he was very fond. I ascertained also from his niece that about half an hour before the crisis he was conscious of dying and showed signs of fright. As my Secretary had seen his picture before and knew of his death a few moments before, I can attach no evidential value to the apparition and its description. Only the reference to his fright seems to have coincidental pertinence beyond normal knowledge.

I withheld all information of the death from Mr. and Mrs. Smead, who lived in the wilds of another state, more than five hundred miles distant, and where no information of even public matters in Philadelphia can be easily secured. Casual information about my father-in-law was practically impossible without access to Philadelphia papers, and this the Smeads do not have. On the 2nd of January, a little more than two weeks after my father-in-law's death, at a sitting which was held by Mr. Smead in pursuance of the regular arrangement, my wife purported to communicate and asked when I was coming. On January 5th I had a sitting with a medium whom I have called Mrs. Smith in the *Journal*, and my father-in-law purported to communicate, giving a number of things in proof of his identity, among them an allusion to my having told him that, if he would not believe in a future life in this one, he would have to believe it after death, and spontaneously mentioned that he had met his mother. On January 7th Mr. Smead had another sitting, still not knowing the facts, and my father-in-law purported to communicate, giving his name as "Geo. W. H." refusing to give more of it,



and alluded again spontaneously to his having met his mother. He also alluded to a negro servant and correctly described her dress. This fact even I knew nothing about and had to verify by inquiry of the surviving widow. I wrote to ask Mr. Smead if he and Mrs. Smead understood the meaning of the sitting, appearing myself not to understand it. He replied that it was "all Dutch" to them, and expressing surprise that I did not understand it, as the automatic writing had referred him to me when he wanted to know who was meant by the incomplete name.

Soon afterward I had a sitting with Mrs. Quentin (pseudonym), a lady of excellent social standing and so non-professional as not to admit any one to experiment but myself, and my father-in-law purported to be present again and stated that he had met his mother, his sister, and my wife, giving the latter's name in the course of the writing. Mrs. Quentin did not write the relation of the communicator to me correctly, having said in the automatic writing in response to my question on this point that he was a cousin. But she got the impression that it was my father-in-law. No other evidential incidents came at this experiment.

The consequence of these collective hints was that I arranged for three sittings with Mrs. Smead in April last, beginning the 9th. It is noticeable that no other communicator purported to be present or to communicate than my father-in-law, except my father, who was a control in the experiments. At the first sitting he mentioned in proof of identity some experiences "over on that other land," indicating that it was probably Europe, whither he had gone once when my wife was studying music in Germany. The fact, however, was or had been known to Mrs. Smead and has no evidential significance. But it was more pertinent to have him mention his regret that he had not aided the work of the Institute financially, a work that he had opposed with all his might when living. This attitude of his mind was not known to Mrs. Smead. In the reference to the European trip he made mention of some incidents which are very probable, but which I have not been able to verify, and if true they were certainly not known to Mrs. Smead. Toward the end of the

sitting his name was given as "Hall, George W.," which was correct, and the remark made that "he has a small George." He had no son by this name, but my son by that name was a great favorite, as indicated in the incident about his calling the name in the delirium of death. Mrs. Smead, of course, knew my little boy, and Mr. Hall's surname, but probably did not know the Christian parts of it. I am confident that she did not know what the "W" stood for which came out at the next sitting.

At this second sitting the evidence of the supernormal was much better. He referred to his business as that of woolen goods and made an attempt at the name of the company. He also alluded to the fact that he travelled "on the cars," a statement which I take to refer to his having been the travelling agent for the house, which he had been at one time. He had retired from this business some thirty or more years ago, and it had not been known by Mrs. Smead what his business had been.

But one of the most important incidents which he thus told referred to our conversations on this subject. I quote this in detail.

"Mary came to see me trying. She said, tell you we believe now all right.

(Do you remember what I said about that?)

At your house?

(Yes.)

You said I would have to believe here and I had better before I came.

(Yes, that's right.)

If I had known what you do I would have long ago.

(Did we talk about this subject elsewhere?)

When I was there with you?

(Yes, in some other place than my house.)

You talked with me in my house and at the lakes. James, we talked much about it, this subject of living continually.

(Yes we did. Do you remember the last summer where we talked about it on the mountain side?)

Oh yes, I was agoing to say it was under the trees. We walked where no one could hear us. I said I wished that I could have proof of my Mary's living, I would then believe."

It is true that we had frequent conversations on this subject, both in my own home and his, and also at the Adirondack lakes. He always shook his head at my belief and I several times told him that he would have to believe it after death, and I especially told him this on the mountain-side at the time mentioned. We were standing under two maple trees off alone, and he had said that could he have proof that his daughter survived he would be satisfied.

In the last of the three sittings several evidential allusions were made, some of them too personal to mention. But there were allusions to some pictures and his house that were pertinent, tho probably not so important as they seem to me, owing to their apparent indefiniteness to all but myself.

But perhaps the best incident occurred in the first sitting. Before his death, as indicated above, my wife purporting to communicate through Mrs. Smead, had said that he did not believe and that as soon as he passed out he would come and admit his mistake. The reader will recall the apparition the morning of his death, tho it was not evidential. But at this first of the three sittings the following occurred, begun spontaneously as the reader will remark.

"I was glad to be free. You understand me James.

(Yes, I understand.)

Yes, I did come to you so that I could tell you. I wanted to tell you I was living still.

(Do you remember how soon you came?)

Came where?

(Came to me.)

As soon as I left the earth Mary brought me to you, but I could not talk. It was because I was weak when I tried to come back.

(Did any one see you?)

Where do you mean?

(When you came to my home.)

You know the lady saw me and I tried to make you see me.

(Yes, that's right.)

When I go back I will tell Mary about it."

This incident tells its own story as a corroboration of the apparition. The fact that Mrs. Smead knew my Secretary

was somewhat psychic hardly suffices to make this a guess, tho one has to face that objection. But the allusion to his coming to tell me and the later frank admission of mistake in his belief is a natural sequel, and the two features of this message together have some value as evidence of the supernatural. With the group of personal incidents which cannot be mentioned and which are the best evidence, they collectively give much weight to the favorable comparison of the phenomena with the best in the Piper case. A point not to be disregarded is the representation of events on the "other side" which, tho they are not in any respect evidential, are the most natural in the world on the assumption that we are dealing with something more than the relation between living minds.

There were two or three occasions when my father-in-law apparently tried to communicate through Mrs. Smead after the date of January 7th and before I visited the Smeads in April. There are incidents of value in them, but the reader will have to go to the detailed record for them. The Smeads had not yet conjectured his death.

I had spent several sittings for testing whether it would be safe to try strangers. To make this assurance better I arranged for a lady to have a few sittings. She had met Mrs. Smead at my table, so that her name was known. But nothing was known of her history, save that she had lost her husband, and it may be possible that Mrs. B. had indicated in conversation what she had called her husband, namely, Captain, as she always does. But knowing that she was expected to have sittings she had been entirely reticent about all other matters. The reader may be assured that the incidents in the record were not known by Mrs. Smead, tho I shall not urge this conviction beyond the rights of scepticism, and tho I can say I myself knew none of them in spite of a somewhat intimate acquaintance with Mrs. B. and her history.

I was sent from the room early in the sitting and Mrs. B. remained alone. Her deceased husband purported soon to communicate, tho he did not give his name or any initials

until the close, and then not with certainty. She was at first addressed as Lizzie. Tho her name is Elizabeth she was never called Lizzie by her husband. But nearly all the pet names by which he called her were given in this sitting. They were "Precious," "Darling," "Love" and "Pet." They would not ordinarily have any significance, but the circumstance that they have never been used previously in any case by Mrs. Smead in her trance possibly makes their fitness have some importance in this instance.

The next sitting by Mrs. B. was several days later. My wife had expected to communicate on this occasion and came at the opening for a few minutes, then left. Mrs. B.'s husband again purported to communicate and reproached his wife for making mistakes because she did not think, she in fact, being very impulsive, and addressed her as "my girlie," which he had been accustomed to do in life. The first sentence alluded to the fact that it was their wedding anniversary, which it was, a fact known only to Mrs. B. Later he referred to her fits of depression, which were not known to Mrs. Smead. In speaking of a personal matter he also gave a name Charley H., which was correct and unknown to Mrs. Smead and all others in this vicinity. He then intimated that Mrs. B. had given his son his ring and studs. She had given him the ring and watch, but not the studs. He followed this statement up with an allusion to what they did on their wedding day. I quote it.

"We went alone that day and on the cayes [southern for 'cars' and often spelled 'cyahs'], you know. Your mother did not want to part with her daughter, but we were so happy.

(Who else was at our wedding?)

[Confusion and scrawls in which apparent attempts at the letter 'o' are evident.] ouch. [A common expression among the negroes, but was a specially common one with an old negro servant of the family. He prepared the wedding luncheon.]

He says, Law Missie. [Mrs. B. broke down crying.] Don't cry."

The points made in this passage explain themselves. A few moments afterward the communicator called the sitter his sweetheart, which he had been accustomed to do in life, a

fact without significance except that it has never before been used in this case of Mrs. Smead. He signed his name "Capten" at the end. A characteristic expression also came out in an allusion to saving "against a rainy day," a remark often made by him to her in life.

In the next sitting some days later the matter is too personal to discuss, but contains some very pertinent statements. One of them alludes to her riding, which had been a habit of hers many years ago.

At the last sitting several days later the same communicator stated that they had a colored man to drive them to the cars and that the cook was afraid she would not see Mrs. B. again. Both of these incidents were true. He closed the sitting by signing himself Papa, which was the name by which he always signed his letters.

The incidents are good evidence of the supernormal, tho the fact that Mrs. B. was in the house during the day while the sittings were held would detract from their importance in the eyes of most critics, and had I been dealing with a professional psychic the objection would have much more weight. But I was myself an observer of the situation and Mrs. Smead had no ordinary opportunities to talk with Mrs. B., and the latter was herself sceptical of the phenomena and anxious to withhold information from Mrs. Smead. The incidents that came are of a kind not easily obtained.

I had had some sittings reported by friends of a lady whom I have called Mrs. Quentin in the articles of the *Journal* for February, March, and April, and also some personal sittings with her. The results were such as to induce me to try her for a sitter. I therefore arranged for her to take a few sittings. She was able to take two. The results have their interest.

The first sitting, which was on October 24th, shows very little that might be interpreted as supernormal or evidential of it. Apparently she was represented as communicating with a deceased husband when, in fact, her husband is still living. She was introduced or brought into the room after Mrs. Smead went into the trance, so that there was no normal knowledge of her appearance, name, or identity. But

we may assume that her voice would betray her sex. Hence it is possible that Mrs. Smead's trance personality would conjecture her object. But while Mrs. Quentin finds the confusion so great as not to be sure what the results indicate, she does distinguish two different communicators and if any incidents definitely bearing on personal identity had been given she might have distinguished them clearly. Only two allusions suggest supernatural tendencies. The letter "E" given at one shot is Mrs. Quentin's initial, and the word "violet" possibly indicates the fact that Mrs. Quentin had put a bunch of violets on the coffin of the lady whom she thought to be communicating.

The second sitting which took place on October 31st was much better and contains some incidents that are supernatural and much that is suggestive of spiritistic sources tho not evidential of them. The incident which seems to carry us beyond the resources of secondary personality is the one which refers to the sitters deceased child and his "rattle ball." The child had had a toy which was a combination of rattle ball and a musical instrument. The allusion to my father's name as the same as the name of the child has its psychological interest, tho the circumstances prevent our making it evidential. The reference to the sitter's grandmother shows a correct conception of the situation, as this grandmother had figured in the experiments of Mrs. Quentin.

To those who are already familiar with these phenomena there were clear hints of the supernormal in these two sittings, but they would not go far in proving any theory of them.

The next two sittings to be noticed were again given to a lady who had had some experiences in automatic writing since the death of her husband, and it was my desire to see if this fact led to any better results than in those who exhibit no psychic tendencies. As before, the lady whom I shall call Mrs. X., was introduced into the room after Mrs. Smead had gone into the trance. I was as usual asked to leave the room.

The first part of the first sitting, November 1st, shows the natural mental attitude of lovers and one allusion which lies on the borderline of the supernormal. It is the reference to



Mrs. X. looking up and smiling when he used to put his arms around her and to her not doing so when he does it now! The incident represents a feature of these phenomena in other cases where communicators say that they do certain little acts which are not felt or known by the living. There was an allusion to the fact that Mrs. X. had "some light herself," which meant that she was psychic, a circumstance absolutely unknown to Mrs. Smead, but is so commonplace a statement by mediums generally that no value can be given it beyond a coincidence. The mention, however, that he had come to her in this connection possibly gives the statement some force, as she had done automatic writing herself. But the most important incident is the statement: "It pleases me to see you carry those flowers for me." Mrs. X. constantly carries flowers in the memory of her husband, a fact of which I was as ignorant as Mrs. Smead. The statement that he did not suffer so much as Mrs. X. supposed is probably true, tho, until the physicians told Mrs. X. otherwise, she thought he had suffered excruciatingly. He did suffer much pain, but less than she imagined. The reference to their sitting together and his smoking was also true and evidential. Also the statement that he had "lots of comfort" in his smoking.

The second sitting for Mrs. X. had to be stopped owing to the desire of the control not to have too many sittings. This was on November 2nd. The next was on November 6th. In this the first incident of importance is the allusion to a "Derby hat and wearing it on the back of the head," a habit which was characteristic of the sitter's husband, and so also was the statement that he "would sit with one foot on the other and lean back in my chair with my hat that way." This was a clear picture of his habit and manner. There followed some unevidential matter relating to Mrs. X.'s experiments at automatic writing and the difficulties of communicating and it closed with the request of the sitter to write his name. The initial J. was written, which was correct, and characteristic of this sort of thing, showing a recognition of the fact that incidents bearing on personal identity are more important than proper names, the state-

ment was appended that "it is better to have my things spoken of here so [that] you know me by them."

As Mrs. Smead came out of the trance she described a man with light brown hair, blue eyes and wearing a "stand up collar." The description was that of the sitter's husband.

At the sitting of November 7th I introduced, as usual, after the trance came on, another stranger whom I shall call Mrs. P. The first specific incident which referred to a "lady with a brown hat" has no meaning to the sitter. The Mary referred to might be the wife of the sitter's cousin. She had died a year previous. The reference to "a little heart" is not intelligible to Mrs. P., tho it apparently means some piece of jewelry.

At this point in the communications it appears that it was her mother that purported to communicate and she was addressed as "child," a manner which Mrs. P. says was never characteristic of her mother. There is also apparent reference to the grandmother who, Mrs. P. says, may have called her "Child." This grandmother died when Mrs. P. was a very young child. The reference to "the little heart" seems to be a very striking incident. At the time of the sitting (Cf. Note p. 680) Mrs. P. thought it had no meaning, but later she recalled that a cousin (Cf. Note p. 680) had given Mrs. P. and her sister two beaded pin-cushions, the one that was heart-shaped going to the sister. But Mrs. P. liked it so well that the sister gave it to her for many years. This cousin afterward married the Mary in connection with whom the reference to "the little heart" is made. She referred apparently to a son, tho not specifying this relationship, and advised Mrs. P. to make the needed sacrifices to influence him and soon said "give him coffee and lots of it." This son, the sitter's brother, was left in the care of Mrs. P. He was very intemperate and the sitter had done all she could to reform him and had given him a great deal of coffee to restrain his appetite. This, of course, was not known to Mrs. Smead, neither were the facts known that made the apparent solicitude in the communications intelligible.

When the sitter asked if her husband was with the communicator, she received an affirmative reply and with it the

statement: "We have our little one and he is near you." Mrs. P. had lost a child. As Mrs. Smead came out of the trance she saw the letters B. and W. The sitter comments that the B. is not intelligible, but that W. might refer to the brother apparently indicated in the communications, as his name was William.

Mrs. P. did not keep her agreement to be at the next sitting, and a friend came in her stead. At this friend's sitting the absence of Mrs. P. was deprecated by the communicator and it was said that "the Dr. friend" had come expecting to communicate. Mrs. P.'s deceased husband was a physician, a fact not known to Mrs. Smead. So also was the gentleman to whom she was engaged after her husband's death and who died before the marriage could take place. It is probable that "Dr. Friend" refers to him. This person also is possibly the gentleman referred to at the previous sitting as "the gentleman with a silk hat," as he had been accustomed to wear a silk hat in the evenings and at church.

Mrs. Z., as I shall call her, came on November 8th instead of Mrs. P. Mrs. Z. had met Mrs. Smead on the previous Sunday at dinner and so the latter knew her name, but at most heard nothing about her except probably that the friend with her called her Cassie. Mrs. Smead knew nothing whatever of her history, and neither did I, tho I had been acquainted with her for a year or more. But to counteract the immediate effect of this condition of things I did not admit Mrs. Z. into the room until after Mrs. Smead had gone into the trance. I did this both days so as to admit the least possible ordinary source of information as to the lady's identity. The record will show that there was no recognition of the lady except the name Cassie, which came in such a manner as to associate it with incidents not normally obtained.

The first allusion at this sitting was the reference to "Dr. friend," who came, as it were, with the expectation of communicating with Mrs. P. his wife, the expected sitter. That he was a physician was not known to Mrs. Smead as explained above. It was explained that Mrs. P. had not come. Some explanation took place on the "other side" and my father, who was acting as control, went for another commu-

nicator. During this pause Mrs. Z. placed a photograph of her father on the table. Mrs. Smead's face and eyes were buried in a pillow and she could not have seen this if she had been normally conscious. But the first communicator was apparently not her father, but her deceased husband, since there was the statement that he, C., did not now have "any trouble with his throat." Her husband had died from throat trouble. In a moment came the message:

"We would ask thee to put it where we can see it, C. You know there is a friend here that has a letter H. like that, what is it, arris. You know him. Daughter will remember my sitting for that picture. They said it was a life size one. You remember how it was with that black coat and my collar was turned over, not the standing up kind. You know my picture then did not your daughter. It was that large one and my face was nearly over to the side. You know that I like to tell you I am here and I can remember the way it looked up there. I can see it in that room with the others. It is looking from the left, Cassie, to the right. Do you remember about it. I am.... He must rest. [pause.]

Perhaps he can tell you about his home with the trees that shaded the front. You remember where he stood when [he] stayed at the Capitol. You remember the large house, looks like a wide street. He says it was a large house with windows that are out in front, bay ones, lots of steps to the front door, and he lived there when he was in the city, the Capitol City. You know this is me.

(Am I your daughter?)

Yes, she is my daughter, Cassie P. He is here whom you once knew and your friend said wait. It was at that city where his picture is. We would tell you that the friend goes to the place called congress, no, where they gather to talk much of it. He used to, he says, enjoy being in the Room with the other representatives. He would like to have you tell him who has his place.

(Write that again.)

Place, who has it, the \* \* [undec.] no senator in my place now. Can you tell me? You do not hear me do you?

(Yes, I hear.)

Then why don't you answer me who is in my place now as senator?

(Josiah Wood.)

I guess I did not know him.

(Yes, you knew Josiah Wood.)

We did not meet there together."

At the sitting on the next day there was some apparent confusion between the husband and father at the outset. There was a request for the communicator's glasses, but none had been brought. The father's gloves were placed on the table. Mention was made of their aid in preventing dizziness and then a desire expressed to "let C. talk to you" (sitter), and when it was asked who C. was, the answer came: "You wait. He has become mixed up. The friend was very sick before he came here and it was a long illness, he says, and now he is tempted to cough much when he comes near you. So we told him to wait and he can try it again. The friend that used the gloves would speak more." There was then a change of communicator and the messages are apparently resumed where those of the previous day left off.

"I used to have a seat with lots of others and I used to write a great deal. You hear me do you. Do you remember how much I used to write and I read much too. I can now without using my eyes. You know I used to use my glasses: now I don't. and I...."

You know there wasn't much grass around our city home. It was, don't you know what I said. Tell me daughter what I said to you.

(You said there was not much grass around our city home.)

Yes that is what I said and we had one away from there that I liked that did...

(Where do you mean father?)

It was in a different place. We had to go a long way on the cars. You know about it. It was our own state. I mean I used to like to come home to it. We had a pretty place with grass in front and a walk up to the veranda, piazza they call them down there. I will rest. Tell me if I made you hear me, daughter.

(Yes, you did.) [pause.]

Now there was a young lady that came to one assembly that had such crimping of her hair in front and down by her neck, the rest was fixed in a knot. She wore a white dress or ball gown they called it and many admired her. You met her then. She just passed here a little while ago while I was speaking to you.

(Was it Miss Dalton?)

You know her.

(Yes, Miss Dalton.)

She was the one greatly admired. I only remembered her as one of your friends. It was at the assembly.

(What date please?)

We cannot tell them. I must go now as the friend says he wishes to talk to his son, so dear I will say good morning. We do not need say good-by now because we can't talk from here to you."

As this was near the close of the series, the rest of the sitting was taken up with communications between my father and myself with reference to the future of the work.

But the facts now regarding the incidents of the sitting are as follows. Mrs. Z.'s husband, as I have remarked, died with throat and lung trouble, that is, bronchial tuberculosis, and suffered tortures with his throat. The letter C. probably refers to him, as Mrs. Z. called him Cullie. The name "Harris," as it appears—or perhaps it is a confusion for two names, since the letter H and the part "arris" were separated in a way to suggest a confusion—is possibly an attempt at "Henry Allison," who is a deceased uncle of Mrs. Z.

Mrs. Z.'s father was a senator in the Canadian Parliament for many years and had his residence in Sackville, New Brunswick. He was Speaker of the Canadian Senate. He had a life size portrait of himself in his home, which was situated among a number of others as here indicated and which Mrs. Z. was very fond of, as he was also, and he gave it to her. There was also another similar portrait of him in the Ottawa Senate Chamber. The description of the house in which they lived in Ottawa is fairly accurate except that there were no trees in front of it, so far as Mrs. Z. recalls. They lived in several places, however, while he was Speaker of the Senate. It is possible that the trees referred to are in the grounds of the Parliament buildings. The description of the picture is perfectly accurate in all its details. As a photograph of it lay on the table we cannot press the sceptic with the importance of this detail, tho he may rest assured that Mrs. Smead did not and could not see it, even if her eyes had been open, instead of being closed and in addition were buried in a pillow on a head rest through which she would have had to be able to see in order to see the photograph. The picture is almost a profile and of a life size, and apparently a standing collar, tho one may be uncertain of this.

His successor as Senator was a Mr. Josiah Wood, a personal friend whom Mrs. Z.'s father knew well. Possibly his question here referred to his successor as Speaker. This is not determinable. But they did not meet in the same chamber, Mr. Wood being in the Lower House at the time.

Mrs. Z.'s father did a great deal of writing, both as a member of Parliament and as executor of many estates which he managed. Mrs. Z. says he "was everlastingly writing."

He lived most of the time while in Ottawa in a hotel about which there was no grass. But his house in Sackville was situated in a large lawn with trees about it, a driveway and walk up to it. There was a piazza about it, of which Mrs. Z.'s father was very fond and spent many hours walking on it, two hours every day that he lived in it. Its distance from Ottawa, perhaps a thousand miles, explains the pertinence of the allusion to going "a long way on the cars."

The description of the lady friend was so accurate as to recall at once to mind a Miss Dalton, who was a young niece of Lord Lisgar and was visiting Canada at the time of the events mentioned. Mrs. Z. frequently met her, and she was the admiration of every one. Mrs. Z. did not know whether she was living or dead, as she had not seen her or heard of her for many years. But a long and complicated inquiry resulted in ascertaining that she had died about two years ago.

I think this group of incidents is a very striking one and it will be apparent to any intelligent reader that the circumstances do not admit of any ordinary interpretation. The confusion in them is characteristic and duplicates, as do other sittings, similar phenomena in the Piper and other cases. The evidence of identity in this instance is as good as any one could desire and the nature of the incidents with their locality and circumstances exclude the possibility of obtaining the information in any normal way. I was myself a witness of the whole acquaintance of Mrs. Smead with Mrs. Z. the previous Sunday, and not a word passed that revealed more than her name Cassie, and that is only conjectured. Mrs. Smead saw her but about three-quarters of an hour and never saw her normally afterwards. The description and ascer-



tained death of Miss Dalton are proof of an unusual source of information, if we attach any value at all to the incident.

But it is after all folly to assume anything doubtful about the matter, as Mrs. Smead is not a professional, and, as remarked, takes no remuneration for her work and has no means of making the necessary inquiries for discrediting the evidential value of the facts.

I come next to a group of sittings which were entire failures, except one of them, which, tho not good enough to treat seriously as containing evidential matter, nevertheless contains hints of it. I quote this one first as a transitional one to the entire failures.

I shall call the sitter Mrs. H., whom I introduced in the same manner as the others, namely, after Mrs. Smead had entered the trance and without mentioning any names. She was simply quietly beckoned into the room when I was ready. I was as usual soon asked to leave the room. The sitter was a lady who had been extremely desirous for years of having sittings. She was resolved, however, when the chance came not to give herself away, and in pursuance of this policy not only remained absolutely silent while the writing was going on, but could neither read it nor show the intelligence necessary to tear off the sheets as they were filled with the writing. The consequence was great confusion and a natural demand to know if the messages had been "heard," that is, received. I had to return, at first, for the moment to remove the written sheets and finally to watch the writing and read it.

Only two incidents suggest the supernatural even in their type. The first came in answer to my request, after explaining to the communicator what we wanted, that he tell little incidents to prove his identity. The answer was: "I cannot tell her one thing she does not already know." The lady has always been morbidly afraid of telepathy and has demanded something she did not know as a test. Mrs. Smead, of course, did not know this and the pertinence of the answer suggests some knowledge of her state of mind.

The second incident was a question by the communicator in which he asked the sitter if she always wore the rings, and

on her affirmative reply intimated that he had put the first one there. The sitter afterward admitted that these statements were true. But they could not be given any special significance, tho a similar statement has not occurred in the Smead record. The remainder of the statements in the sitting were worthless evidentially, tho there is nothing in them to indicate that they do not have the same source as better sittings. One noteworthy incident occurred after the sitter left the house. I had carefully concealed the lady's name from absolutely every one in the house, as I did all other sitters, and I had also been careful to admit her to my house without being seen by any one but myself. The doors were closed so that my Secretary did not see her enter. But some time after the sitting my Secretary suddenly stopped her work and asked me was not that lady Mrs. H——, giving her full name. I simply asked her in an indifferent manner what made her think that. She replied that she heard a voice say it. I then admitted it was correct. She says that she had never seen Mrs. H. in her life. The disappointment of Mrs. H. was so great that she would not take a second sitting.

I turn now to the instances which were entire failures, according to the statements of the sitters.

Mr. M., as I shall call him, had agreed to pay the expenses of the experiments, and so I had planned to have him take a number of sittings accordingly. The first of these sittings was given him on October 22nd. My wife had been expecting to communicate and so I began the sitting a little earlier to admit her for a few minutes before bringing Mr. M. in. After some pertinent messages about her father my wife yielded her place and the gentleman was admitted.

The sitter placed his pipe on the table, as an object for "holding" the communicator, whatever that may mean, Mrs. Smead being in a trance and wholly unable to see the article, tho we must assume that her olfactory sense might have perceived it. The first remark of the communicator was to admonish the sitter not to use the weed so much. An allusion to having seen him in this city before was made and was false, in so far as this medium is concerned. This was fol-

lowed by a criticism of his sceptical attitude of mind which is quite true. Then soon followed some references to a sick lady, implying that she was still living, an implication corrected at a later sitting, and after this a detailed account of what her room looked like, such as that a white dresser was opposite her door, the chair next to it white, the bed white and breast rings on it. Then it was said that these rings were on a tray and that he had given one of them to her.

The second sitting the next day resulted in the reiteration of one or two incidents of the day previous and the statement, in explanation of the difficulty, that the gentleman "does not bring light with him and it is very hard to work for him." We had to close the sitting without anything as suggestive as the day before. But as Mrs. Smead came out of the trance she said that she saw two ladies, one with very dark hair and eyes and the other with light hair, laughing as if playing a joke on some one.

Nearly two hours after the sitting my Secretary felt as if she were being controlled and asked that Mrs. Smead be brought in. I did so and my Secretary soon went into a trance and wrote automatically. The request was made, apparently coming from Dr. Hodgson, to put the two "lights" (mediums), together the next time. I accepted the hint and this was carried out at the next sitting for Mr. M.

This next sitting was held October 26th. As soon as the writing began it was explained that the control would communicate for the person from whom the sitter desired to hear, and who had attempted to communicate at previous sittings. Several allusions were made to the communicator's sickness and suffering, and an indication that the sitter would not like to think she was still living. But finally without any progress the sitting had to be terminated with an explanation that the communicator was in no condition to communicate.

This closed the sittings of Mr. M., as it was apparent that his presence only brought confusion. But at a sitting for another stranger on November 12th the same lady purported to communicate and wholly out of relation or pertinence to the sitter. After the sitting at which my Secretary had been present, she remembered some of the impressions acquired

during the experiment, tho she was in a trance, and she went to the gentleman and advised him to ask the communicator's forgiveness for something she felt he may have done. At the sitting of another stranger there was an allusion to this, and the communicator was profuse in granting her forgiveness, an attitude wholly confusing to the communicator.

One simple comment on these communications will suffice. I quote the letter of Mr. M. to me. He says, June 8th, 1907:

"I have again read over the record of the sittings, and would say that there is hardly a shred of evidence tending to establish the identity of any deceased person that I have ever known. In a number of places in the record reference is made to specific things which in a considerable percentage of cases would—some of them at least—have made 'hits.' I mean the reference to the bird, method of dressing hair, color of furniture, etc.

"In my case, these references are uniformly irrelevant, as applied to any of my deceased friends, and would, it seems, apply to almost any one else having a number of friends on the 'other side' better than to me."

At the next sitting, October 25th, I brought one of the old Piper sitters with the desire of ascertaining whether I could in this way attract Dr. Hodgson. With her came a gentleman friend. In all these previous sittings, except one, he had not appeared to communicate. In this one he purported to suggest a most characteristic experiment, one that he would have naturally suggested in life. I refer to the incident of having the two "lights" sit together. But I wanted to see if I could in this new case secure an identification of the sitter and obtain some facts which would involve a cross reference with the Piper case.

The lady whom I shall call Mrs. L. was admitted as usual and without Mrs. Smead's previous knowledge of her in any respect. A few specific matters were mentioned that might have suggested evidence had they actually applied to the sitter, but nothing of interest beyond guessing or secondary personality occurred.

On October 27th a second sitting was held for this same

Mrs. L. But if anything this sitting was worse than the first. There was not in either of them the remotest suggestion of Dr. Hodgson or of any one that would make a further account of it interesting.

The next sitting which has to be marked as a failure was on November 12th. I brought a gentleman whom I shall call Mr. C. He too was absolutely unknown to Mrs. Smead and to all others in the house. The communicator purported to be the lady who claimed to be related to the Mr. M. of the sittings outlined above. There was not a single pertinent fact in it for the present sitter. At the sitting of November 13th the same sitter, Mr. C., was present and the communications were much more relevant. The name Henrietta, which was that of his wife, has no value because he had actually asked for her by that name the day previous. But the name Harriet, given spontaneously, has some suggestiveness in it, as she is a close relative of Mrs. Quentin and has been a communicator through Mrs. Quentin when Mr. C. was present, he being a relative of the Harriet mentioned. The allusion to the ring and other trinkets can have no evidential importance tho they are true in this instance. Some things that followed this were wholly irrelevant and the allusion to a "boy with golden hair and blue eyes" was wholly impertinent, and could refer only to another sitter whom I have called Mrs. B. The sitting of Mr. C. has to be regarded as a practical failure. It closed the series.

If I were asked to explain these failures I would only say that we are not yet in a position to do so. If we had found no evidence whatever of the supernormal in the results we might well explain them in a very simple manner. As I have thrown fraud out of account I do not suppose them due either to the lack of supernormal capacity in general or to the lack of previously acquired information for normal use. Hence the inquiry to know why the failure would occur in these cases and success in others does not obligate us to give ordinary reasons, and any others are wanting in the present state of our knowledge regarding such things. If I were advancing any theory at present to account for the successes I might be expected to explain failures, but I am not yet con-

cerned with explanatory hypotheses. All that I am endeavoring to do is to exhibit the facts in the experiments and to show that there is evidence for the supernormal despite the limitations of the phenomena in the sittings which disappointed the several persons present. When it comes time to give an explanation for this supernormal, I may be asked to account for the limitations of the medium. At present we shall have to remain content with the fact of failure in several instances. I am not disposed to apologize for them in the interest of any special theory, but only to admit them without equivocation. It will be noted, however, that they are failures only from the standpoint of evidence for the supernormal, and not from the point of view of psychological connection and identity with other important features of a non-evidential character.

#### **Miscellaneous Incidents.**

In the preceding part of the summary I have confined it to the systematic features of the sittings. I come now to a few incidents of an evidential character which were not directly connected with the more complicated ones.

In the sitting of October 15th, my wife, after alluding to her father's condition and affairs, sending him a message of comfort in his dying hours, said: "We will help you, James, all we can for your work. It is what I should have done before I came here." Taken in connection with the allusion to her father, and also with what he purported to communicate with reference to assisting the work, and more particularly with the procrastinated and finally unsettled condition of my wife's property affairs, this message comes as near being a very significant thing as I know, and the facts were absolutely unknown to any one living but myself and my father-in-law.

On the same evening at a second sitting there were some suggestive communications regarding a young girl my wife had taught in music, but they did not reach the evidential stage. The next morning, however, Mrs. Smead reported a vision the incidents of which describe my wife and her home with considerable accuracy. The description of my wife was

as I met her at the steamer dock on her return from Germany. Of the house the following was the account given:

"I saw a house. It seemed to be at the entrance of a stone house. There was a long walk. You came up two or three steps from the street and the sides of the walk to the house seemed to be brown stone from the street. There were urns on the sides of the brown stone walk. The grounds seemed quite large and with lots of trees. I could not tell whether the house was brown stone or brick, but it was trimmed with brown stone. It set far back in the grounds and was high enough to look over the tops of some other houses."

The description of the house is fairly accurate as may be seen from the account of my brother, whom I asked to investigate. I visited the house but once, and this was in 1888, soon after my wife returned from Europe and before we were married. There was a long walk from the street and the house sits far back in a terraced yard and high enough to look over some of the houses in the neighborhood. The front portion of the house is made of stone and the rear of brick. The stones are of mica schist and are of a grayish color, while some are stained brown, probably from iron pyrites in them. The ground was full of trees and the walk was lined with brick, not brown stone. I do not recall any urns, but there was a fountain in the middle of the walk which divided around it.

On October 16th my wife communicating alluded to a personal matter about which Mrs. Smead knew absolutely nothing, tho it was possible to have conjectured it. Hence I shall make no point of it here. Toward the end of the sitting, having indicated that the same subject had been mentioned to me through another "light," of which I had no evidence, she intimated that the method of communication in that case sometimes involved visualization of the messages and "some lights read easier in that way." The woman's husband was present and lights were seen by all of us present in the room, but we attached no significance to these proverbially suspicious phenomena, and it is not necessary here to regard them as genuine in recognizing that the incident is supernormal, in so far as Mrs. Smead is concerned.



On October 17th my wife, again communicating, mentioned that we had brought some trinkets home from Switzerland, which was true, tho we had not been there together. The mode of referring to these was interesting, as the name was not completely spelled and the words "high mountains" were added to indicate what was meant by "Swit," which was evident enough without this explanation. Mrs. Smead knew nothing about the facts. She also alluded to my wife's watch which I had kept and about which Mrs. Smead knew nothing, tho she might have guessed that my wife had owned one. The appearance of Dr. Hodgson's initials was interesting in the midst of this.

At the sitting of October 18th my father said that an uncle had tried to communicate at the case which my wife had apparently mentioned on the previous day, and on being asked who it was, identified him fairly well by saying that he "was the last one that came here" (died). When I asked if any other uncle had tried away from this case, he replied in the affirmative and described him as "the larger." This was an apt description and identified him sufficiently. I had gotten no proof of the attempts of either of them in that case, tho I did get hints of their presence. I then asked if an aunt had tried and was at once told that she had, and her name was given as "Lida, no Lydia." This was correct, except the Lydia, as I had gotten her name, and that of her husband, my uncle, at this other case three weeks before, and the interesting feature of it is that the spelling of the name "Lydia" is the same as it was in the Piper case. I had an aunt Lida who died a few months before on the Pacific coast, and my father in mentioning my sister Lida in the Piper case had once or twice gotten it Lidia. It is interesting to find the same phonetic mistake in this instance. Mrs. Smead knew nothing about this aunt or her death. I was the only person in the house that knew it and not more than three persons in New York knew it, or could have any interest in it.

On October 20th my father, who was controlling, wanted the pencil fixed as he had held it in life. I had been accustomed to put it between the first and second finger, as in the Piper case. Here he asked definitely that it be placed be-

tween the forefinger and thumb, which was actually the way he held it in life. The fact was wholly unknown to Mrs. Smead. A little later he alluded to the fact that they, the Imperator group, were not accustomed to hold sittings on this day, which was Saturday. This was true in the Piper case, but known to Mrs. Smead. But my father went on to speak as if they observed the Sabbath on the "other side" as he did in the past, but corrected himself presently by intimating that his memories entered into these statements. In the midst of the message he said: "I was very strict about it when you were a boy. I did not like you to work on the Lord's day." This is correct and "Lord's day" is a most characteristic expression. In a few minutes he added: "I always had the boy[s] take care of their clothes and especially their boots for the Sabbath. When it was not pleasant that we could go to the meeting house I used to read the sermons at home for the family. In the sitting room we gathered for worship, you remember, James. I always held the family Bible on my lap while I read it to my family, the discourses. What you referred to at the other light was the singing part."

We shall have to assume that Mrs. Smead knew the incident of the "reading the sermons" and the family worship, as they are mentioned in my Piper Report, of which a copy is in the Smead home, tho Mrs. Smead has not read any of it normally and knows of no other reading. Mr. Smead may have mentioned the fact. Still the incident is told here in a way somewhat different and more characteristically. But the allusion to taking care of our clothes and especially of their boots is remarkably clear and accurate. We were not allowed to fix our clothes or to black our boots on the Sabbath, but had to do this work on Saturday evening. A noteworthy point, also, is that they were *boots* and not shoes at that time. I never wore shoes in my early life. We had only boots. Mrs. Smead was entirely ignorant of these facts, and they are very rare facts in the habits of any family.

It will be remarked that some of these incidents are quite evidential. They exhibit all the psychological characteristics of the same method as that which is apparent in the Piper

sittings, tho this can be remarked only by reading the detailed record and observing such features of it as do not come under notice in this selection of incidents which are supernormal. On the whole they make a good showing for the same significance as we find in other cases of mediumship. Their interest will be much better defined by a study of the detailed record. This selection only helps the reader to appreciate the supernormal character of such parts of the matter as transcend ordinary explanation. With this understood we may turn to some other features of the phenomena.

### **Psychological Verisimilitudes.**

Hitherto I have confined the summary to those communications which give evidence of information not normally acquired by Mrs. Smead, neglecting, as we must, those messages which might possibly be interpreted as fictitious and imaginary and the play of subconscious functions. Whatever source they may have they do not offer scientific evidence of anything beyond the dreams of secondary personality, in so far as the standard which we must adopt at first in measuring these phenomena is concerned. This is to say that we must admit any assumption associating this matter with normal explanations rather than resort to the supernormal until we have indubitable proof of the latter in data which no one can question, after he is satisfied that fraud has been excluded. But we must not forget that, when the supernormal has been proved, the evidential and non-evidential statements form the same general mass of matter, and that we must then accept the challenge to distinguish what is transcendent to normal acquisition and what is fictitious. It is of course not an easy task to separate what the subliminal may do from what has been supernormally acquired, but there are instances of statements which show greater possibilities of a transcendental origin than others, and so will have their interest in their relation to what is probably so. For this reason we must expect some sort of unity between the evidential and non-evidential matter, and it will be important to examine the record with reference to this possible unity. Some of the non-evidential incidents and state-

ments may thus tend to confirm the theory of a transcendental origin by virtue of their internal articulation with such a view, tho they do not suffice to justify advancing the hypothesis in the first instance.

There is manifest much more difficulty and confusion in the communications in the Smead than in the Piper case, and this circumstance will give the reader of the detailed record more perplexity in ascertaining its meaning. But as strict scientific accuracy requires us to record the facts exactly as we receive them, he must accept that burden and make the best of it. But no student will be able to understand either the nature or the limitations of these phenomena who does not give a most critical examination to just the characteristics which I have mentioned. The non-evidential matter must receive the same careful study as does the evidential, and its measure taken in terms of the alternative hypotheses that have to be tried in reducing the phenomena to intelligibility. What I wish, therefore, to call attention to is a number of statements and psychological characteristics which have a spiritistic verisimilitude.

The characteristic to which I refer can hardly be described in a phrase, as it consists of various forms of statement and play of mind which are quite natural on a spiritistic hypothesis, or on the same theory as that which will explain the supernormal, but which offer no present proof of their correctness. The reader must determine this for himself by studying its relation to what we know of the human mind in such a situation as must be imagined in a world where personal identity is retained and where efforts are made to communicate with the living. By far the largest portion of the sittings is taken up with this non-evidential matter, and it generally has a most interesting psychological unity and at least plausible significance, with as many intrinsic indications of its truth as could be expected under the circumstances. I can examine only the most important instances of it and these very briefly.

The reader should remark the confusion in the first sitting of the series and the explanation for it and the apparent difficulty of communicating. Mrs. Smead had just arrived the

night before, wearied by a journey of five hundred miles. The effect of this journey was alluded to, and whether we attribute to this any reality or not, it is an appropriate reason and may illustrate the delicate physiological and psychological conditions with which we have to deal in such experiments. A rest of several days resulted in much improvement, and the sitting went on with comparative ease and satisfaction when the experiments were resumed.

At this second sitting in the series my wife purports to be the communicator, and in connection with the messages which I have quoted above relevant to her father, who was dangerously ill at the time, this not being known to me or the medium, she said: "Tell him for me to be comforted in the thought that we are helping him, yes, not to worry, that is, his Mary sent it." Had not Mrs. Smead known my wife's name this might have been evidential. But it has, without this feature, that kind of connection with the natural solicitude for her father that, taken with the evidence for the supernormal in the sitting, it has all the characteristics of a genuine message in accordance with its purport.

At the next sitting I asked my wife if she remembered the young lady whom she taught music, and the answer was that she had taught a number of them, a fact quite inferrible by Mrs. Smead from her knowledge that she had taught music. But she went on to remark that this was "away from here," also inferrible. Then in response to the incomplete statement on my own part: "But there was one. . . ." came the answer, "one this side of the water," but I could not get the name tho I deliberately thought of it to see if telepathy could enter into the result. It was true that my wife had taught this lady on this side of the water, and she had also taught her and another person on the other side of the water.

There is, of course, nothing evidential in this incident, but the reader will remark the distinct pertinence and naturalness of the conversation which comes right up to the limits of the evidential without being easily attributable to guessing or inference, and also not the most natural consequence of what Mrs. Smead actually knew of my wife's history. The trace of the connection at the right point between her life before

and after she returned from Germany is most natural on the assumption of the reality of the communications, tho we admit the possibility of subliminal guessing, for which there is perhaps no evidence in spite of imagining it conceivably possible.

This sitting was October 15th. On the 16th my wife again appeared to be the communicator. She mentioned a personal matter which was unknown by Mrs. Smead. Soon afterward I admitted a lady to witness the process, as I was expecting her to take the evening sitting. My wife expressed surprise or ignorance that another was to be present and asked me why I did not tell her before. After my explanation of it the communications reverted to the personal matter regarding the care of the children and the very true and pertinent statement made that they "needed it more than" I did. Almost immediately she remarked: "Why how strange it is to me in my own home," and in explanation of the indistinct writing of a word said spontaneously: "You can get what I say afterward cannot you sometimes. We have to think rapidly here." The subject then reverted to the communications through another psychic in which visualization and lights were mentioned as phenomena connected with it, one of these being correct, and then indicates that "sometimes the light does not get it [the message] clearly, and afterwards gets it when no one is present." The sitting came to an end at this point.

In Mrs. B.'s first sitting, after a group of very characteristic incidents and pet names the communicator remarked: "I must go now. I do much of it time, we have to rest here. We rest sometimes when we have been near the earth, but we cannot remain too near it always." The confusion is apparent here, as it is evident that the complete message did not get through. The latter part is clear enough, and the point of interest is the relation of the statement to the doctrine of "earth-bound" spirits, whatever that may mean. It has not occurred often, if at all before, and the doctrine has not been a part of the belief of Mrs. Smead. It reproduces ideas that are implied in many statements made in the Piper sittings, but not directly affirmed in

my records. The next day my wife, after some pointed messages, remarked that she would have to go because she was tired, evidently experiencing the fatigue which is so commonly complained of in this work, a fact of psychological interest on any theory.

A most striking incident occurred on this date of my wife's attempt to communicate. I had purported to get a message from her through a child five years of age some weeks before, and to test matters I had sent for an article which the child had worn. On this occasion I simply took the article and placed it on the table while my wife was communicating and asked her if she knew what it was. Immediately great confusion followed and I had to quickly remove the article from the table. As soon as the excitement in the hand subsided and her mental poise was resumed, she said: "I can get nearer you without it. It troubles me." There was no knowledge on Mrs. Smead's part that the article did not belong to my wife, and in fact Mrs. Smead did not know normally that I had placed any article there at all, and so far as she might be supposed to know it might have been my wife's. If there is anything in the influence of articles it was manifest here, and the most astonishing feature of the incident was the occurrence of something like catalepsy in the hand, apparently caused by the article.

The apparent incursion of Dr. Hodgson at the close of the sitting, with nothing of an evidential character, but with the characteristic statement that he was helping as usual is quite natural on the spiritistic theory and consists with what is represented as fact in other cases and is not a familiar circumstance with Mrs. Smead.

In the sitting of October 18th my father made an interesting statement which, tho it represents facts actually known by Mrs. Smead, is associated with a form of statement and certain limitations which are not natural on a theory of secondary personality. I imagine it might occur easily enough on that theory, but it is a curious mode of exhibiting combined ignorance and knowledge where we should most naturally suppose that the knowledge was sufficient to complete the statement. After saying that he had worked with



this case when I was not present and that he had effected something in spite of being told he could not do it, he went on to communicate:

"I took friend R. H. to her.

(Good that is a good statement.)

Yes, not here.

(Yes, that is right. Where was it?)

I do not know the name of her home. It was. . . . [pause.]

(I did not mean the house, but just the place in general.)

From here it is [pause.] at north, not east or west.

(That's right so far.)

North and east."

The record shows that Dr. Hodgson and my father purported to appear to and through Mrs. Smead soon after his death, and before she knew of his death. She knew of this communication, however, soon after it occurred. It was not at my home that this appearance took place, but the home of Mr. and Mrs. Smead. This was situated exactly northeast from New York. On a theory of secondary personality and subliminal knowledge, which is usually conceived as capable of almost any indefinitely large work, the name of the place ought easily to have been given and no circumlocutory way of indicating the locality. We may perhaps suppose sporadic amnesia to account for it, as this phenomenon occurs often enough in normal life. Hence we cannot regard the incident as evidential, but it is a curious complication of correct information and limitation just at the point in which we should expect ignorance on the part of a spirit and at a point where secondary personality ought naturally to know. In applying its action to the wonderful phenomena in the past of this case, we have to assume it especially capable in recalling little details of this kind. But in this instance where spirits would most naturally possess decided limits in their knowledge we find the subliminal duplicating it at the fortunate moment to make the simulation perfect. Without evidence of the supernatural we should have no alternative in the explanation, but just to the extent that we have to admit this supernatural to the same extent must we assume or assign limitations to subliminal simulation of the real phenomena.

After some interlocution about having told me through Mrs. Smead, in answer to a question some months before about our outbuildings at home, he voluntarily resumed the topic of communicating with Dr. Hodgson and explained that the apparition of me there was due to Dr. Hodgson and himself acting together and intimated that the phenomena were good evidence of her honesty, a point which it was characteristic of this group to make, even tho Mrs. Smead's subliminal would be equally interested to have it made.

In the sitting of October 20th, after the directions which my father gave me regarding the way he wished the pencil fixed and commented on below (p. 627), he continued his communications:

"I did my writing carefully James. I did not like to hurry through life. Now we have to hurry so when we come back we have so little time to use, but I am trying to control my patience and to see if I cannot do more and better for you.

(You are doing finely today.)

Do you not think..... [pause.]

(Yes, you are right. You are doing better than ever before.)

Some one spoke to me quickly and I almost lost my control. [pause.] Your friend Hodgson said, try it this way. He said to keep cool, work slowly, and in the end more would be accomplished rightly.

(Yes, that's right. That's just like him.)

It is very hard to say all at once."

It is true that my father did his writing carefully, tho he had a poor hand, and he always worked patiently and without hurry, tho he was not slow or plodding in character. The advice said to have come from Dr. Hodgson is perfectly characteristic of him and consists with all that he had learned in his management of Mrs. Piper. Mrs. Smead knew nothing of this, while the psychological play is unsurpassed for its reality.

A little further on in the sitting he apparently resumed the subject and said:—"At that other light I used to get very nervous and frequently had to leave you to get control of myself, so I will try here not to do it. Mary was sorry she could not stay [alluding to a previous sitting] but is as she knew she would be

when she knew that we could really talk, so anxious to have you know it."

If we can judge from the apparent mental condition of my father in the Piper sittings we can well recognize the truth of what is said here about his nervousness. The statement is almost evidential, and only the necessity of supposing that Mrs. Smead could infer this from her presumed knowledge of that record prevents our regarding it as evidence of the supernormal.

At the sitting of October 22nd an incident of another kind occurred. It seems that my wife understood, rather assumed without any intimation of mine, that she was to communicate that day. My father, who was controlling at first, asked me if I wanted Mary, my wife, to communicate, and on my assent with the qualification that I expected a man soon, she at once began communications about her father and wanted to know if I thought he was coming soon, apparently alluding to the desire to have a sitting. I had sent for him, but learned that he was unable to come. I said here in answer to the question that he was unable to come. This fact was recognized and the conversation went on in a most rational manner until the door bell rang. Then, without any indication from me, Mrs. Smead being in the trance, my wife said she would have to go and bade me good-bye. In the communications she alluded to the desire to make her father's death as calm as possible and said that it was all wrong to keep a knowledge of that life from him, and added that they must tell him. Then she added that she did not like him to suffer in coming over.

The facts were that those about him would not mention the messages that I had sent to him and he was suffering very keenly in this stage of his disease. Mrs. Smead knew neither of these facts.

It is not necessary to lengthen out the narrative of such incidents. They would only repeat in their main features what I have already summarized, and this suffices to show the general reader what the phenomena are that lie on the border land of the supernormal and articulate with it. I must, therefore, leave the more interested reader to the de-

tailed record for any further examination of this type of communication. I have made clear what it is, and in fact the earnest student will always prefer the complete record where he may study the facts in all their confusion and fragmentary character and where, if he has patience, he will get a much better conception of them than he will from these excerpts. But they add psychological interest to the incidents which are undoubtedly supernormal and to that extent support the hypothesis which accounts for them.

### Conclusion.

I shall not discuss elaborately any theory of these phenomena. The Reports on the experiments with Mrs. Piper provide the explanation, if only a tentative one, of this type of facts, and I simply publish this instance of them as corroborative of the theory applying to Mrs. Piper's case. It is not necessary to present this as independent evidence or to discuss it as if the explanation rested only on its evidence. The theory for such phenomena has already been determined for us, and we have only to suppose that this Report supplies additional support for it. That additional evidence has long been demanded and wanting in the form desired. Many were loth to make up their minds in favor of any hypotheses until they found several or many such instances of such cases, and this instance adds one to the number required to understand better what we are dealing with in these phenomena.

It will be clear to readers that it does not furnish as good evidence as the case of Mrs. Piper. The reasons for this are various. One of them is that there has been no such systematic experimenting as in the management of Mrs. Piper. I have had to rely largely upon the work of Mr. and Mrs. Smead by themselves until I could arrange for these more conclusive experiments. But it is probable that the main reason is that there are certain constitutional differences between the two cases and certain difficulties due to these facts which have prevented our securing as good results. But this does not matter, so long as we actually obtain similar phenomena, which I think all will admit. This similarity justifies the assumption that the explanation should be the same,

and I think that all the arguments which tell for the spiritistic and against the telepathic hypothesis apply to this instance as fully as to that of Mrs. Piper. I need not discuss them in this Report at any length, as it is intended to corroborate rather than to prove an hypothesis.

The phenomena in this instance are especially interesting for both their resemblances and their differences in comparison with the Piper case. The reader will be quick to observe both characteristics. The resemblances are found in the decidedly spiritistic appearance of the incidents, showing the same nature as in other similar cases. These resemblances even extend to the confusion and errors, and the one distinguishing difference is in the more fragmentary and less satisfactory character of the evidence. There is not much dramatic play of personality, and this would hardly be expected if an explanation of George Pelham, made through another medium regarding this one, is to be accepted. This was that the mental habits of the subject were so different from those of Mrs. Piper that it is more difficult to get messages through. From my experience with these phenomena I can well understand this claim. But not to press it as more than a suggestion, the facts certainly indicate limitations in the one case not so apparent in the other.

The difficulty with proper names is the same in both instances, often illustrating their origin in phonetic influences and analogies. The kinds of confusion are much the same, and the same explanation is given, or hinted at, in this as in the Piper case. In some instances the very same language is used in the two cases, and this, however, only in connection with the same communicators in both. But in many instances it is much more difficult to get messages through Mrs. Smead than through Mrs. Piper. The reasons for this are not always apparent, except as they may be intimated in the more fragmentary nature of them. This may be an advantage in studying the limitations under which communications of any kind may be made, but they also disappoint the researcher after the supernormal in a form to make a spiritistic argument as effective as sceptic and believer alike desire it to be. Passing this by, however, the main incident

distinguishing the two cases is just this fragmentary character of the communications.

I do not require to illustrate the resemblance in spiritistic intent of the record. That is apparent in all of it, and is especially suggested in the evidential part of it. But it will make the other points clearer to give examples of what has been alleged. I take up the confusions and errors and shall examine a few illustrations of them.

### Confusions and Errors.

In judging of errors we must remember, however, that the point of view from which such an allegation must be made will be that of the sitter. It is always assumed, whether rightly or wrongly it is not necessary to say here, that the communications, if they are to be considered at all, should be true or false to the sitter, or, when neither true or false to this person, as irrelevant. But it must not be too hastily taken for granted that a thing not true in reference to the sitter is not true at all or that it is wholly irrelevant to the problem we are trying to solve. It may have great importance whether true or false, and may be true in relation to some other incident or person than the sitter. But in the experiments we are conducting it is necessary, for evidential reasons, to treat all communications in their relation to the sitter, since they purport to be for that person from an alleged friend or relative. The examples chosen will have that idea in view.

A case of confusion is the following. I had been receiving what purported to be messages from my wife, when she was apparently interrupted by what we should describe as the appearance of a new communicator to take her place. An apparent change of control took place and the following was written showing no natural association with what was going on before. My wife had been communicating about what she should have done before she passed away, as the reader may see in the detailed record (p. 597).

Good morning James. [pause.] I am tired. [not read at time]  
(Who is this?)

I am tired now, going.  
(I don't read it. Try again.)  
Going James tired now. Wait here.  
(All right.) [pause.]

At this point I placed some articles on the table which had belonged to a friend from whom I wished to hear, and on any theory of telepathy I should have heard. Immediately following the pause mentioned my wife again took up the communications and began a clear and evidential incident in reference to our enjoyments in music, as the reader will observe who reads the record.

There may be some doubts about any real change of communicator in this. We may suppose that it was the same personality involved in the confusion that was apparent in the clear messages both before and after. But the address, "Good morning," tho sometimes used in the Smead case at the close of morning experiments, was too near the beginning of the sitting and the expression "good-by" at the end rather suggests that psychologically the situation involves a change of alleged communicator. But whether we assume that it is my wife or a new communicator that is purported, the evidence of confusion in the psychological stream of action is apparent, and with the change of subject in the messages it is also equally evident that the process represents a close resemblance to the Piper phenomena. A point could be made of the expression, "I am tired," but it would require too much discussion and space to make it apparent. It simply coincides with a whole group of facts which it resembles.

In another instance at the close of a sitting and after some clear statements about certain phenomena on the "other side" the same communicator purported to control or communicate.

I will go now, yes.  
(Goodbye. God bless you.)  
\* \* \* ['bless' ?] you and \* \* \* \* \* [pause.] yes. I \* \*  
when I can get it [pause.] alright [pause] and I must \* \* it is  
\* \* goodby, Mary.

It is not necessary to conjecture what the attempt here



was. It is the peculiar confusion that is illustrated by it. There is nothing evidential about it, and no spiritistic hypothesis is necessary in order to consider psychologically what the phenomenon is in this confusion.

Another instance represents some mistakes as well as confusion in the communications. A most interesting feature of it also is the disregard of the sitter's questions and suggestions by the communicator, showing, on any theory, the independence of the sensory processes and their cleavage with the intellectual. It occurs in a sitting by a comparative stranger, as explained in the notes (p. 609), tho the incidents are not affected in this case by the little previous knowledge of the person which Mrs. Smead had. The instance occurs in the first sitting of this lady (p. 609).

(Will my father live long?)  
 \* \* J. S. ['S' doubtful.] help you to [?] know [?] me better. [pause.] How \* \* \* \* could J. S. [or L.] \* \* \* \* not all of \* \* we [pause.] can only tell the [thee] now \* \* [last three letters clearly are 'hum'.] I wihsi [wish] I could talk to you. I would tell you better not worry. God is \* \* [near] to help you. He will help my Lizzie.

(Who is Lizzie? Who is Lizzie?)

I know I would if I were with you. [pause.] Do you think I would have another to take your place were you here and I there, my dear? Do you [pause.] what I say. Do you, Lizzie, think [pause and scrawl.] I said. . . . Do you, Lizzie, think I could have another take your place with me? [pause.] I would not want to. Would. . . .

(You never called me Lizzie. Won't you call me by the familiar name you used?)

No, No. I said, do you, Lizzie, think I would have another take Beth. you \* \* can say it together and it was what I called you many times. \* \* [scrawls.] Do you understand. [pause.] Lizzie Beth. [pause.] yes, sometimes. [pause.] It is much like it \* [pause and scrawls.] not this time Pet. We must not be parted now. I do not want it no \* \* [pause.] Precious [pause.] wait \* \* [scrawls.] my dearest, sweet girl. I will come to you here soon again and I will try, darling, this \* \* \* \* \* \* \* [pause.] and hard. Wait for me here [pause.] after the next Sabbath.

The disregard of the suggestion is apparent, and at places also the interruption of the logical current of consciousness.

But the peculiar confusion about the name is the first interesting feature of the communication. Elizabeth is the name of the sitter, but as the record shows, she had never been called "Lizzie" by the communicator, and it was natural on any ordinary theory, fraud or secondary personality, to correct it to Elizabeth, when the hint was given that Lizzie was wrong, tho it would have been equally natural to have avoided Elizabeth altogether and tried some other guess. But as Mrs. Smead knew that she was called "Bessie" either fraud or secondary personality ought to have said "Bessie." But we have the mongrel "Lizziebeth," and written in the peculiar way indicated in the quotation, which is not a natural correction on any theory. The psychological confusion is apparent on any view.

But the most interesting aspect of the situation is that the terms "Pet," "Precious," "My dearest," and "Sweet girl," and "Darling," and others mentioned in later communications, were especially characteristic pet names by the communicator for the sitter. If Mrs. Smead had been accustomed to use them in her automatic writing their occurrence here would have no value, but all of them are used for the first time, unless "darling" may have been used once or twice with reference to their own deceased child in speaking to him while he was communicating. But I do not recall it once in the record during all these years, while the others have never been once used by communicators and certainly not by sitters, as there have been none up to this time except Mr. Smead and myself, and one or two others. That they should all be mentioned at one shot and be true at the same time is significant, and they represent a peculiar evasion of the "Bessie" which she was also called, which Mrs. Smead knew normally from occasionally hearing my housekeeper use it, tho every one else used "Mrs. ———," and which was the natural guess from the name actually given. But it took a deal of hard psychological hitting to get the communicator away from the subject on which he wished to discourse or communicate, while the whole drift of mental action is clearly like that of the Piper phenomena.

One other instance of a type of confusion particularly

manifested in the Piper case is that of repeating a word which has not been deciphered until it is read and repeating it in a way to exhibit special efforts to make it legible (p. 620).

(Please make that word clear because I can't read it.)  
continued.

(I don't still get it. Write it more distinctly.)

c o n t i n u e d.

(Is that 'contuned'?)

No, no, now, no. c o n t i n . . .

('Continued'?)

Yes, u e d.

(Do the others feel the same way?)

No, u . . . yes, yes hers. [pause.] they know we love here and it would comfort them to know they are [apparently written as if intended for 'they're'.] they [erased.] there [probably meant for 'their'.] friends are very happy and busy learning the higher ways of life.

One will not read Piper records very far to see this type of phenomenon, the repetition of words to be sure that they come through, the spontaneous erasures, and the phonetic spelling of words with another meaning. All this is probably known to Mrs. Smead, and hence I do not quote it as super-normal, but as representing psychological resemblances to the other cases on record. Certain features of the phenomena did not appear, however, with all Mrs. Smead's possible knowledge of the records—she never read any of the Piper reports, tho they might have been the subject of conversation between Mr. and Mrs. Smead—until after the alleged presence and influence of several personalities which have been prominent in the Piper case. But evidential questions aside the general psychological identity is patent to any reader of details.

I shall quote one more instance which shows some approximation at least to the familiar phonetic errors in the Piper case. But it is more interesting for the mental confusion evident, whether we place it in the alleged spirit or in the subliminal action of Mrs. Smead. It was in the communications of my father-in-law soon after his death. After alluding to the fact that he had been connected with a busi-

ness in woolen clothes he went on to give the name of the company (p. 711).

I remember [pause.] I no [know] you will remember about that store [pause.]

(Yes.)

It was some years ago \* \* ['some'?] I liked to be there when Mary came to it, yes.

(Wait a moment.) [Hand began to superpose the writing.]

A Hall [pause.] O [pause.] A K C L O T H I N G. [read aloud to see if I had gotten it correctly.] did I not tell you rightly yet? I...it did not seem that I heard you.

(I got the words: 'A Hall Oak Clothing'.)

[Hand trembles considerably.] \* \* \* \* oak Hall Clothing Company.

The passage then closes with evidence that there was a determined effort to force this through.

• Now this was not the name of the clothing company to which he belonged. But it was a clothing company, and the names of his partners were very different from this. But at one time he had a partner in another business whose name might, in such confusion as is apparent, become "Oak" in the spelling. But I do not attach any weight to this conjectured attempt at such a name, but I do remark the confusion incident to the phenomena and its very decided resemblance to the Piper case. That readers will have to determine for themselves by a comparison of the records. But the phonetic spelling of a few words, the incidental change of thought caused by it, and the stumbling about to complete a difficult message is exactly what we observe as the psychological feature of both cases.

#### **Fragmentary Messages.**

It is apparent that all the communications, evidential and non-evidential alike, do not represent normally systematic control of the motor organism. But we cannot make any use of non-evidential incidents because we have no proof that they represent imperfect facts in the life of any one. So far as their mere fragmentariness is concerned they might be mosaics of somnambulant phenomena. But if we have any

supernormal facts to consider where we can ascertain the wholes of which they are naturally integral parts we may have illustrations of the resemblance to other cases. It is such to which we must confine attention.

The first instance which I shall notice is one in a sitting where my wife was the alleged communicator. It will illustrate confusion at the same time (p. 611).

Then we brought home little things from S w i t . . . . I cannot spell it.

(Describe that place.)

high m o u n . . . [pencil ran off sheet.] untains. there you know.

Now my wife and I had been in Switzerland, but not together. It was she and others of the family that had been there, and they brought home many little trinkets from there, as did I also. Neither the trip nor the facts mentioned were known to Mrs. Smead, while, if they were, she might more easily have spelled the word "Switzerland." There is only a hint in the message of what is constructible from it. [Cf. *Journal Am. S. P. R.* Vol. I., pp. 183-228.]

Another instance is the following. It occurred in the sitting of Mrs. B. (pp. 621-2).

I do not want to talk to any one else. We went alone that day and on the cayes [probably intended for 'cyahs'; negro dialect for *cars*.] [pause and apparent excitement in hand.] you know.[pause.] your mother did not want to part with her daughter, but we were so happy.

(Who else was at our wedding?)

\* \* \* [confusion and scrawls, in which were apparent attempts at the letter 'o'.] ouch [a common expression among the negroes, but was especially common with an old negro servant of the family who prepared the wedding luncheon.] he says, Law Missie, [Mrs. Le M. again broke down sobbing.] don't cry [pause.] It is no time to cry, but you must be like as that other day.

Mrs. B.'s mother was very reluctant to part with her at the time, and as the inserted notes indicate the old negro servant was an important factor of the wedding, to which reference had been made spontaneously earlier in the sitting

by the communicator, the sitter's deceased husband. The word "cayes" speaks volumes for the fragmentary nature of the message and "ouch" is a most distinct indication of identity without giving the name. Anyone can imagine the whole which the incidents represent.

Speaking of "cars" another interesting illustration of this fragmentary nature of the communications appears, under this very term, in my father-in-law's communications at a later date (p. 711). Just before the passage about his former business which was quoted above and connected with it, as he had previously indicated that it was with "woolen cloth, lots of it"—it was a wholesale trade—a number of scrawls occurred and ended with the words "on the cars." It was his business to travel and effect the sales for a long time in his earlier days.

One of the best instances of this fragmentary message is the sitting of Mrs. Z. (p. 682). I should have to quote too much of them to illustrate this fully, and so I shall content the reader with the reference. But one instance shows a sudden change in the communicator's talk about his glasses to his home, and an equally sudden change from talk about his city to his country home (pp. 685-6).

My father-in-law's communications are full of fragmentary messages. I am especially in a position to observe this by my knowledge of the facts. It would require too much discussion to illustrate this clearly. I shall quote but one of them.

You remember when we went... [hand then drew undulating lines which I at once saw represented mountains.] (Yes.) yes, and the pleasure we had. Fix this. [Pencil had slipped up in the fingers and was adjusted.] over on that other land where some of the people we did not understand. The houses on the ['houses' mentally read 'hours' and then audibly as 'houses'.] no, no, no, no. we did not understand their way of speaking. You remember the funny little houses on the mountains.

(Tell me all about them.)

Mary was there too. You know all about them. We could not talk as they did. (That's right.) and I tried to [pause.] yes, wait.

(Yes, I'll wait.) [Hand relaxed and turned over to one side, and in a moment began to tremble again.]

yes and we had to give them so. . . . [erased.] souvenirs of our money to. . . . ['souvenirs' read *some* with accent indicating it was not all.] no souvenirs of our money for keeps. You know what I mean.

Apparently this is the same incident to which my wife referred at an earlier sitting. The incident is correct enough, save that no one knows anything about the souvenirs, none probably knowing it except my wife and her father. It is an extremely probable incident. But imagine the reference here to be a trip in the Alps, the peculiar houses on the mountains, and the giving of American money to some of the hotel servants as souvenirs, and you will have some conception of the fragmentary character of the communications.

#### **Dramatic Play of Personality.**

I cannot give any clear examples of the dramatic play of personality, as there are not many of them definitely or explicitly manifested in this series of records. Some of those in the cases occurred much earlier in its history. It would have to develop much better for this type of phenomenon to exhibit itself freely.

It may be worth while, however, to call attention to the few cases of dramatic play of personality noticeable in these sittings. By it I mean, of course, the apparent conversation between spirits in interruption of the general representation of direct communication.

In the sitting of October 20th (p. 624), while my father purported to communicate and to make special effort to act deliberately, he complained that "some one spoke to him and he almost lost his control." There was no evidence of any disturbance to me except the fact of a pause, and in the nature of the communications at the time there was no reason for any such dramatic representation except the possible reality of it. It implies the existence of co-operating agencies toward the end described and would be a most natural phenomenon on the supposition of real personalities communicating, and would be less natural in this form for a secondary personality.

In the sitting of October 24th (p. 641), the situation is



this. A lady who is a perfect stranger to this work was having the sitting. It was apparently necessary to have no misunderstanding in her mind as to the *modus operandi* of the communications. This was that the messages did not come directly from the real or alleged spirit. Hence my father who acts as control on the occasion explains to the sitter what will take place. I quote.

(Can you tell me who you are?)

I am speaking, he says. [pause.] you want... I am Mr. Hyslop's father. I help.

(Do you want Dr. Hyslop?)

No, I have to talk for your friends and so your work will need pass through to him. Your dear friend is here near you and I hope you will not lose patience with me if I do not make it clear for him.

Just previous to this passage the messages seemed to come direct from the sitter's father or friend, and the control's slip into the conversation made an explanation apparently necessary, and he spoke as if being a messenger. This led at once to an explanation of his function which brings a third personality into the process, the sitter, the communicator, and the control. The action on "the other side" is represented as more or less dramatic in character.

In the same sitting (p. 643) a similar explanation is given by the control for some misunderstood statement of the communicator. The communicator had apparently referred to a friend of the sitter as a "light" through whom he might communicate, if she, the lady, would permit. As the sitter did not understand the situation she was told by the control, interrupting the regular communications, that the communicator referred to conditions on "that side." The expression "from our side over here is what he means, friend" is made by the control to the sitter as an explanation, and is not the natural message of the communicator. It, too, implies the interaction of more than one personality in the process.

In the sitting of October 29th (p. 653), another instance is especially good, as indicating intercourse on "the other side" on a matter mentioned at an earlier sitting. The sit-

ting was intended for Mrs. B., but my father, who was acting as control, requested that I be alone with him a little while. I asked Mrs. B. to leave the room a few moments. At a previous sitting Mr. B. had promised to appear to her (p. 620). After she had left the room on this occasion my father, showing that he knew what had been done previously, asked if I wanted the same friend as before. I replied in the affirmative. Then he said: "He said, had she seen me yet?" Mrs. B. had not yet had any apparition of Mr. B., and here the inquiry regarding the fact was made in the personality of another individual. It implies conversation or knowledge on "the other side" between spirits and this interruptive display of it.

Another illustration of this is very interesting. It occurred in the later sitting of Mrs. B. An allusion had been made to the desire of the communicator that the sitter should try for him alone and without the intermediary of another. In the course of it the word "Mamma" was used, and as the sitter's mother is not living she did not understand the reference, and so asked for an explanation. At once my father interrupts the communication with the statement: "Now what does he mean when he says mamma. I, R. H., said it for him. He needs to rest awhile." Then followed a pause.

Again we have here the play of another personality acting as the intermediary for a communicator, and explaining the cause of confusion in the message. It is not as clear as often occurs in the Piper case, but it is apparent that the psychological phenomenon is the same.

A still better illustration is in the sitting of Mrs. X. ((p. 673). She asked the sitter something about his living brother, and it was apparently misunderstood as referring to a deceased brother. The reply was a call to him. With this explanation I quote the passage in full.

(Tell me, do you see William?) [Living.]

William yours \* \* [undecipherable]. She, my wife, wants you. Shall I, yes.

(That message is not clear.)

I only spoke to him. I said you wanted to ..... [sheet

changed.] but he will not try. He is smiling as usual. He says it is a joke."

The situation for a secondary personality was to take up the message in accordance with the question. Telepathy would have known that the William was living, tho it is perfectly natural to suppose him deceased from the nature of the question. But there was no special necessity for the dramatic representation of speaking to a person on the other side in explanation of the situation when she was not asking any one else to communicate. But the appearance of conversation there which slips through is perfectly clear. I do not question the possibility that such things can be done by secondary personality, but from the connections in which these occasional illustrations of dramatic play occur one would find that they are a little complex to attribute to that source when they are associated with the existence of the supernormal, as they are here.

There is one important remark to which I must call the attention of the reader of the detailed record. We may well discount the significance of individual sittings or individual incidents in a sitting, but there are certain features in the collective whole which should be made a subject of note. It is the fact that the incidents which we find true and pertinent are not repeated in different sittings. Even when facts are not evidential they are found to apply to no one but the particular sitter. Commonplace names, for instance, are not repeated as in guessing mediums, but fit the special case at hand. Hence tho we might advance objections to individual cases on the ground of chance coincidence this hypothesis will not apply to the facts taken collectively.

Whatever the explanation of the facts the resemblance to other mediumistic cases should be apparent. The limitations under which such phenomena occur should be equally evident. But as I do not care to urge any special theory of them it will suffice to let them tell their own story to all students of psychology.

## DETAILED RECORD.

Sittings arranged to be held at my house in New York. This is the first of the series. Mrs. Smead arrived last night after travel that left her tired and worried. The little boy with her this morning was fretful and with a disturbed state of mind due to this and her travelling the results were not successful. The little that came was pertinent, but not evidential.

October 11, 1906.

10:35 A. M. Present J. H. H.

[In two minutes the hand began to tremble. One and a half minutes later the trembling increased. At the end of four minutes the writing began, but the pencil ran off the sheet, followed by a pause.] \*

\* The following explanations will make clear the various symbols used in making the record.

The contents of the automatic writing are printed exactly as found in the original, with misspelled words, incomplete sentences, and omissions with asterisks for the illegible matter. The punctuation is my own, except when it occurs occasionally, and this I have indicated in square brackets. I have not been careful to make this punctuation accord with any regular rules, as it might interfere with the interpretation of the record. It is supplied as a pause for the reader, not as an indication of meaning, which the reader may determine as he pleases.

The reader of the detailed record must remember that, as the automatic writing proceeded, I read it aloud to indicate that I received the "messages." When a word was not deciphered the writing would pause or the word would be repeated until I read it.

Matter enclosed in *parenthesis*, or round brackets, consists of utterances or questions by the sitter.

Matter enclosed in *square brackets* consists of various comments or notes that are explanatory of certain mechanical or other aspects of the sitting, or of things in mind but not uttered, and of any incidents which will make intelligible the psychological situation at the time. Sometimes, as the context will indicate, they are added afterward as explaining what is not apparent in the body of the material.

*Asterisks* indicate that certain portions of the automatic writing are not legible, whether it consists of mere scrawls or of evident attempts at intelligible writing.

*Dots*, or a series of periods, indicate that something has been omitted, it may be parts of sentences or parts of words, and this whether by the sitter or by the medium in the automatic writing.

In a few instances the automatic writing by Mrs. Smead showed the insertion of *parentheses*, which I have converted into the ordinary *brackets* in order to distinguish the matter from the statements and questions of sitters enclosed by parentheses.

Where the automatic writing was done in capital letters it is so indicated by repeating them in the record. Where it was apparent that special effort was made in the trance to write clearly, especially by making the letters larger, I have indicated this apparent intention by spacing the words.

\* \* \* [Scrawls.] yes.

(Yes.)

R. H. and [?] your...

(Good, slowly.) [pause.] (How are you?)

and father [word 'father' read aloud.] no, yes.

(Good morning.) \* \* [perhaps scrawl for 'morning.'] \* \* \*

[very doubtful attempt at 'Hyslop.'] [Long pause.]

(Go ahead.)

[Moved pencil to edge of sheet, and then a long pause.] \* \* \*

\* \* \* [scrawls.] yes, \* \* \* \* enough [?] you \* \* \* \* [pause.]  
we are [pause.]

(Are you here Chesterfield?)

what is it [written very slowly.]

(Are you here Chesterfield?)

no, he is not \* \* now [?] \* \* come \* \* \* \* \* \*

(All right. Is it difficult?) yes

(What is the trouble?)

to [too] much cairs [cars] not read at time.] \* \* [scrawls.]  
do you hear us. do you hear us. (No.) to [too] much cars  
[read at time as 'muscles course'] no, to [too] much cars [read  
at time as 'cares.'] no c a r s.

(Too much cars?)

yes, yes.

(Shall we stop today?)

Yes.

(All right. We shall close.)

\* \* [scrawls.]

Mrs. Smead did not go into a deep trance. She described her feelings as going in and out alternately with a feeling as if fainting in the distance. She also said that she saw a person with dark brown eyes, stouter than I am and with brown beard. His hair was thicker than mine and he did not look like Dr. Hodgson, whom Mrs. Smead has seen.

October 14th, 1906.

My brother-in-law came to dinner today and when I introduced him to Mrs. Smead at the table, Mrs. Smead, as reported afterwards, first to my housekeeper and then to me, felt light-headed and her right hand began to tremble as if it wanted to write. To conceal it she says she put it under the edge of the table until it ceased.

There is a double pertinence in this. It was natural for Mrs. Smead, consciously or unconsciously, to associate his

name with that of my wife who is deceased, and who was his half-sister, my wife's decease being known to Mrs. Smead.

The incident making it significant is too personal to mention and is not in any way known to Mrs. Smead. Similar phenomena are reported in critical situations in people's lives and one could recognize a good reason, on the spiritistic theory, for the attempt to communicate with my brother-in-law whose affairs were in a condition that might induce some intervention. There is nothing evidential in the incident, but it resembles many others.

October 15th, 1906.

10:35 a. m. Present J. H. H.

[Placed pair of my wife's gloves on table.]

[At 10.42 the hand began to tremble and at 10.43 to write.]

We are coming nearer ['nearer' not read.] you nearer [read] yes.

(Good.)

[pause.] this [pause.] will go better soon, yes [in response to reading.] [writing then became rapid and scrawly.] \* \* \* \* some [?] \* \* [letters 'uch' clear.] [pause.] will \* \* this \* \* \* \* \* you James.

(Who is this?)

Why [?] not know me, M \* \* yes [?] [pause.]

(Take your time.) yes [pause.] [Pencil changed.] I did not use [?] it [pause.] [possibly refers to article placed on table or to the pencil. If to the pencil it is true.] decidedly not he is soon to come here. [read as 'decidedly nothers soon.'] no, he is [read as 'hers'] he is [read] yes.

(Who is?)

father.

(Who says this?)

M a r y. [read] yes.

(Good, I think so.)

I will meet him. [read] yes. James [pause] in a very short time [not read at time] [pause.]

(After James.)

in a very short time too, yes [pause.]

(Yes, I think so.)

yes, [pause.] what

(Yes, I think so too.)

yes, wait here, yes. [pause.] \* \* \* [Scrawls.] I will be glad to come to m. . . ['to m. . . ' not read at time. But I read 'to come ' as 'he came. '] no, to meet him. [read] yes. [pause.] he thinks too much. I mean worries to [too] and it shou. . . [read as 'about me an the children. '] no, worries to [too] he worries to [too] much [read] yes, about home affairs [affairs] ['home ' not read] home affairs [affairs]

(Yes, I think so.)

[pause.] he should not have any cares now James.

(That's right.)

it is a pity. [pause.] we shall [probably 'he will. '] not stand it [read] yes, long.

(Yes, I feel so too.)

Tell him for me to be comforted in the thought that we are helping him [read] yes, not to worry. [pause.] that is his Mary sent it [not read.] sent it Mary. [pause.] [Hand calmed down.]

we will help you James all we can for your work.

(Thank you. Glad of that.)

It is what I should have done before I came here.

(Mary, I do not regret it. These were useful experiences in life.)

don't be troubled James.

(No, I shall not.)

it is only a little while for your side and then always here.

(Yes, that is right.)

yes \* \* [scrawls.] yes, you [pause.] \* \* [Scrawls.] \* \* [Mary?] [pause.] I will help. [pause.] \* \* good morning, James

(Word before James?)

good morning James. [pause.] I am tired [not read at time]

(Who is this?)

I am tired now, going

(I don't read it. Try again.)

going James, tired now. wait here. (All right.) [pause.]

[I here placed a package on the table containing articles of a recently deceased friend, a mutual friend of my wife and myself.]

music, (What's that word?) [read it mentally as I asked question.] yes, music, yes. (Good.) I would like to play it for you, James [pause.] like we did [pause.] yes, I [?] would \* \* [apparently 'yo. '] sing too \* \* [pause and scrawls.] can you hear me

(Cant read it.)

[pause.] would you sing for me if I could [read 'would. '] could play like we did before I came here. [One word at a time written and read by me before the succeeding word would be written.]



(Yes, I would as well as I could.)

yes, I would like to hear you again, yes. [pause.]

(I should be glad to sing again.)

we used to have a good time sing ing [slight pause after 'sing' was written and I pronounced it, and then 'ing' was written with a slight distance between it and 'sing.'] hymns, yes.

(Yes, we did. That is good.)

[pause.] \* \* [read as 'young woman' at the time, but it is evident to me now that it is 'going now.'] [Changed pencils.]

no, I will come again to you James.

(Good.)

[pause.] goodbye [bye] [pause.]

(Shall we stop?)

I do not want too [to] leave butt [but] I must go. [pause.]  
let \* \* stop [?] its self, James. [pause.]

After some moments the hand relaxed its rigidity, it having shown great stiffness like a cataleptic condition during the writing. Presently Mrs. Smead sighed and awakened remarking that she felt very sleepy. She said also that she heard a tune like singing in her head and saw a man standing behind a counter with his head and hand full of light. He was dressed in a dark blue suit.

Mary is the name of my deceased wife. Mrs. Smead knows this. But she does not know the condition of my father-in-law. It is possible that some remark might have escaped my housekeeper that would lead to the inference of something like what was said, but my housekeeper has just told me that she has uttered not a word to Mrs. S. about my father-in-law or his affairs. Assuming that to be true, it is noteworthy that what was written out is perfectly true. His physical condition is such that we expect him to die almost any day or week, tho' he is able to go about. He is worrying himself to death about certain unhappy domestic affairs.

No trace of my friend is indicated after placing his articles on the table. It is possible this is intended in the greeting just before I placed them on the table.

My wife was a musician, a fact known to Mrs. Smead, but neither she nor my housekeeper knew anything about our singing hymns together. We used to do this very frequently

on Sundays. She used frequently also to play especially for me, a treat which I have missed greatly since her death.

The allusion to what ought to have been done before my wife passed away may have great pertinence. It was her father's intention to have my wife make and sign a will and he had been procrastinating for years about it. Thinking that I might die, as I was not strong then, he was quick enough to have me make and sign mine. He spoke in the summer a few months before she died of having my wife make and sign hers. It was ready for her signature on the day of her death. My father-in-law became executor and the property was returned to him. With the promise that my children would be provided for in his will, I waived the right to be executor and signed a will leaving my property to my children and to Mr. Hall, if they died. Whether any allusion to this condition of my affairs is meant I do not know.

[LATER NOTE.]

The above record was copied immediately after the sitting and at the same time the notes to it were made. I did not know until the next day, when I received a letter from my mother-in-law, that Mr. H. was actually on his death bed. When I made the above note, referring to expectations of his death at any time, I had in mind those physical conditions which exposed him to a fatal attack for some years. But as he was, so far as I knew, continuing at business as he had for these many years of exposure, I did not know that he had actually been seized with an attack. That he was in declining health was not known to Mrs. Smead, much less the present critical condition.

October 15th, 1906.

7:20 p. m. Present J. H. H.

[At 7.22 the hand began to tremble and at 7.23 to write.]

\* \* [Scrawls.] [pause.]

(Can't read.) [pause.] (Mentally: What is the matter?) what is it.

(Well, who is writing?)

[pause.] mother said [not read, but tried as 'others and']

mother said She would have you James tell Father, yes [pause.] my mother.

(Yes, I understand.) yes [pause.]

(I have already written.)

yes, that is like you to do it yes at once.

(Yes.) [pause.] (I told him what you said this morning.)

yes [pause.]

(Now can you write or tell your mother's first name?)

[pause.] She [?] \* \* \* \* \* was [?] \* \* \* \* \*  
[than?] James \* \* heard heard it, father told it to her, [pause.]  
[read a part of it at the time.] yes.

(I don't read it yet. Try again.)

We know it to be so, can you understand me.

(No, I do not. Try again.)

you will [pause.] must ask him

(What for?)

what you said. (Again.) he told it once, yes, (When?) once ask him

(Who told it?)

you said my father [pause.] yes, no, I said my father did it, yes.

(I want you to give your mother's name for evidence.)

[pause.] [The hand seemed cramped and I changed the pencil.] [pause] you do not understand me

(All right. What do you mean?)

you will afterwards [pause.]

Why is at [it] [pause.] I would that we could have enjoyed our babies more, yes.

(Yes so do I.)

[pause.] we would [?] have... could we have known what I have learned since I have been here [pause. I did not read 'been' at once.] been yes. oh, how much we missed. we could have [?] had so much comfort with them.

(Yes wait till I change pencil.)

no. [I started to change the pencil.] no, [pause] could I be there now [read 'how.'] now now [read.] yes, I would stay with them.

(Good. Indeed I wish you could.)

I would have them always with me near. [Changed pencil.] I no... I would have them always near me and with me, yes [pause.] yes. you understand me.

(Yes, I do.) yes. (Perfectly.) yes. [pause.]

(May I ask you a question?)

yes, I will try to answer you, James.

(Do you remember the young lady you taught music to?) when here

(Yes, when you were on this side.)

did I not teach a number of them.

(Yes, where was that?)

yes, away from here.

(Yes, that's right. But there was one....)

one thi...this side of the water. I mean you near near y...

[erased] do to [?] you.

(Yes, I remember one near here.)

[pause.] She came here [read 'come.'] came and I taught her

(Last three words.)

I taught her.

(Yes, do you remember her name?)

I can see her.

(Good. Where is she. That will be a good test. I don't know.)

[pause.] her name you asked me.

(Yes.) [I here mentally thought of the lady's full name.]

yes, yes.

(Well, can you make it clear?) [pause.] (It was not written for me.) [I then mentally spelled the name.]

no I \* \* \* \*

(Words after 'I.')

cannot think it clearly.

(Did you hear me think it?) not so James I \* \* \* \*

(Words after 'I.')

I get so tired when I think hard.

(I understand.)

I think father will want to try next time...time, but want to try next time [not read at the time, but thought to be 'me at home.'] no, next time

(Good. I shall see what I can do. I have arranged for a lady tomorrow night. I shall try for him after that.)

[pause.] good night James. I will go now, yes.

(Good night.)

[Mrs. Smead soon came to consciousness with a sigh. She reported no remembered experiences.]

This sitting contains little or nothing that is evidential. If I had gotten her mother's name it would have been evidential. She did teach a number of students in a college, but that she taught music at a college is known to Mrs. Smead. The failure too to get the lady's name whom she taught in this city prevented the getting of an evidential fact. It was pertinent to refer to "this side of the water" as she did nearly all her music teaching in this country and it was the

girl in mind that she taught here. She came to our house for her lessons. My wife called for her father through Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Blake. Mrs. Smead does not know this unless my housekeeper told her, and it is possible that I had told the incident to this housekeeper.

The three children at my wife's death were respectively 18 months, 5 and 7 years of age. Mrs. Smead knew their ages.

The expression "this side of the water" has more pertinence than Mrs. Smead could possibly have had. All that Mrs. Smead knew about my wife was that she had studied music in Germany and that she had taught it in this country. It happened, however, that she had taught this lady to whom I referred on the other side of the water and afterward on this side. There is the tacit recognition of this distinction in the message.

October 16th, 1906.

Mrs. Smead dictated to me this morning the following experience last night. "I saw a lady standing, as it were, at a counter, near a lot of dress goods. There appeared so many of these goods that she thought it a wholesale store. The lady wore a dark green dress with ecru trimmings on it. She had a hat with a large rim and light color trimmed with these to match the dress. She stood under a lamp and looked as if her hair were light. She had her back to me. After I saw her I saw a house. I seemed to be at the entrance of a stone house. There was a long walk. You came up two or three steps from the street and the sides of the walk to the house seemed to be brown stone from the street to the house. There were urns on the sides of the brown stone walk. The grounds seemed quite large and with lots of trees. I could not tell whether the house was brown stone or brick, but it was trimmed with brown stone. It set far back in the grounds and was high enough to look over the tops of some other houses.

While watching the house I came out of my sleep and saw a light on the side of the gas jet. It looked like a crystal and was about eight inches in diameter. It passed over to

the wall at the right and went out. It remained clear all the while."

As far as it goes this account is a suggestive description of my wife when I met her on her return from Germany at the steamer and of her home which I soon afterward visited. She wore just such a hat when I met her, her hair was light, and if I remember rightly, her dress was of the kind mentioned. I know she had a dress somewhat like this. The hat, however, is the most striking feature of identity, because I used to laugh at her about it as it was so German.

The house is also a fair description of her home. It was a stone building and the size of the stone might be mistaken, in obscure perception, for bricks. The stone was not brown but a very greenish gray. There was a long walk from the street and two or three steps at the street. The house rested on an elevation sufficient to look on the tops of some other houses. There were urns on the sides of the walk. There was a large lawn and the trees on it were of the forest type. I do not recall whether the walk was lined with brown stone. It is not probable. I am not sure that the walk was a stone one. I am inclined to think that it was gravel with stone sides.

[LATER NOTE.]

The above note was written from memory. But to make sure of the matter I asked my brother to go and see the house. He reports as follows:

"The front portion of the house is made of stone to the rear of which a brick addition has been made at some time or other. The stones are of irregular form and size and are laid 'hit and miss,' as it were. There are a good many large blocks of stone in the walls, interspersed with smaller pieces. The stones are of mica schist so common all about Philadelphia, and some are of a grayish color, while others are stained brownish, the latter probably due to iron pyrites embedded in the stone.

"There are two wide spreading oak trees on either side of the front gate. And there is a large sycamore tree to the right of the walk, leading up to the house and located at the edge

of the front veranda. The walk is made of brick laid first, and about one-third of the distance from the gate to the front of the house the walk forms a circle in which is placed a fountain with iron basin."

October 16th, 1906.

10:30 a. m. Present J. H. H.

It was my plan to have my secretary present to watch the *modus operandi* of conducting the experiments that she may take notes tonight at her sitting. When I was ready I signalled to her to come up stairs by tapping on the floor. She came, but the excitement that followed in Mrs. Smead's hand induced me to ask her to leave again. It was plainly indicated in the writing that her presence was not agreeable. In fact, it was the very private nature of the communications that made the delay of her coming necessary, and I did not signal until I thought the personal messages were over. The result will be indicated in the record.

[10.33 hand trembled. 10.35 began to write.]

Yes will come Friend Friend [not read the first time.] yes.

(Good.)

\* \* [scrawls.] \* \* but why do u [you] ask me if [read 'why don't ask me of.'] I care always, James. [pause.] [read 'why don't' etc.] no, why do you ask me always if ['i' carefully dotted.] if I care about what you contem... [thought of as 'continue.'] contemplating doing, yes.

(Well, Mary, I....)

I hear it often. you say it so much to yourself ['If' then superposed on 'fl.'] [pause.] yes,

(What is it that I say so much to myself?)

about what you think of doing.

(What is that?) Should you want me to say it. (Yes.) I do not want too [to]

(I do not object to your saying it.)

I [t] may be better for your side [not read] your side yes

(What else?) [pause.] (Do you think it wise?)

for you it is not necessary [not read] not necessary but it will be in many other ways [not read at time] better in many ['in many' not read]

(What is that word?)



no, in many ways [read] yes [pause.] I wish I were there.  
(Yes, so do I.)

[pause.] [Hand cramped and pencil worn down. I changed the pencil and relaxed the hand.]

that is better. thank you. [pause.] did you want to tell me a story [?] [erased.] about your plans, plans

(Did not get that word.)

plans, yes.

(Yes, Mary, my plan was to have...)

I know [pause.] some, yes.

(Was to have some one care for the children.)

I know it will be all right.

(Then...) [Interruption by housekeeper opening door and asking if I wanted my Secretary to come in. I motioned not.] (I wanted some one who would help and who could aid me in the work.)

Yes, I know \* \* \* \* ['yes but it is?'] I know you will do right about it. I hope what I did not do can be done now.  
[pause.]

(All right. Mary, a question.) I will not leave you either.

(Good, Mary. I am glad to know that. Wait I have to take notes.)

I have to rest. (Good.) [pause.] [Line drawn.] [pause.]

(Has any one else mentioned this matter elsewhere?) not that I can see [not read at time.] not that I can see I told it, yes,

(Where?)

when you were away from here, when you were away from here, yes. [pause.]

(The message did not get through.)

no, not consciously.

(You knew that did you?)

i went [?] I tried to tell it once dur... [?] when you were not present.

(Who was present?)

just the lady and her \* \* when \* \*

(George? 'must the lady'?)

no, no.

(Write it again.)

just yes, lady and her, yes, husband, yes. you had not been there for some time [pause.] I did not write and it was not known, [pause.] yes. [pause. unless she could get it from my thinking it.

(Good, I understand. Do you know how the lady communicated, how the lady did her work?)

[pause.] (Let me change the pencil.) no.

[At this point I tapped on the floor and my Secretary came

upstairs and into the room seating herself by the table on which the writing was going on. The hand became at once quite agitated and I saw that it meant something. I waited for the writing.]

why did you not tell me before [pause and trembling.]

(I was not certain of it. This lady will have a sitting to-night.)

\* \* \* \* \* [written with difficulty and hand trembling.] I must rest [read 'must not tell.' rest, and [?] rest. [not read.] [Here I had to ask the Secretary to leave.] rest. [pause.] help me James.

(All right, Mary. I wanted this lady to see how the work was done, so that she could take notes tonight.)

and I wanted to talk to you alone.

(Well, I have to be away tonight and will have later talks.)

now I \* \* am [not read] now, now I mean just now.

(Yes, that's right. She has gone.)

If you can free your mind you will feel quieter about it, your matters.

(Yes, that is true.) [pause.] (I wanted companionship and proper gentle care for the children.)

yes, you should have it. [pause.] they need it more than you [pause] do. I cann [can] remain with your... in your memory ['memory' read as 'unnecessary.'] no.

(Pause a moment until I come back.)

[I saw that the paper was going to be out in a few moments and asked for the pause until I could get it. I ran down stairs for it and returned in half a minute, and found the writing in progress, three words having been written.]

yes, why how strange it is to me in my own [?] home. It is all right now James.

(Yes, you heard me say I wanted to go away a moment.)

[I had read the words 'to me' as 'alone' and did not decipher the rest.]

I was thinking alone. (Yes.) you do to [too.] [pause.]

(Is that word 'memory?') [thinking of the word read previously as 'unnecessary.']

yes, you can get what I say afterwards cannot you sometimes.

(Yes, some words I do not get until afterwards.)

We have to think rapidly here. (Yes.) [pause.]

\* \* [scrawls across the page.] yes. [pause.] shall I go now [not read.] [pause.] Shall [above read.]

(You be the judge.)

no, I do not want to.

(What method did that lady away from here use for communicating?)

different ways.

(All right, describe one.)

She got them by my talking to her and she could some [sheet changed] sometimes see my thoughts. they are sometimes visualized, yes, no, some lights [pause.] read easier by her in that way. you get what I say yes, [pause.]

(Yes, I get it.)

sometimes the light does not get it clearly.

(Yes, I understand.)

and afterwards gets it when no one is present to influence her. (Good.) yes. [pause.] I will go now.

(Well, Mary, I have to have a strange lady present tonight.)

yes. (Good.) I will go now, yes.

(Goodbye. God bless you.)

\* \* \* [bless?] you and \* \* \* \* \* [pause.] yes I \* \* \* when I can get it [pause.] alright [pause.] and I must \* \* it is \* \* goodbye [goodbye] Mary.

I did not get any message regarding the subject mentioned here at the medium that I had in mind. It was indicated with some clearness in the description who this was, and I take it to be intended for Mrs. Blake. It was away from here and the allusion to the fact that the husband was present with me and no one else describes that case exactly.

The subject talked about here is perfectly clear to me and has been in mind for a year. It refers to my consideration of matrimony and is not known to any one but myself, and two other persons, one of them many miles from here and the other my housekeeper. It is not agreed upon, but has been a matter of consideration. It was alluded to by Dr. Hodgson at my last sitting with Mrs. Piper. I am inclined to think that the allusion through Mrs. Smead is also supernatural, tho it is not so clearly indicated as is necessary to make it evidential. Other statements about modes of communication are not verifiable, but are most interesting.

---

October 16th, 1906.

7.30 p. m. Present Mrs. B.

As I had to be absent I asked Mrs. B. who wished a trial at it to take the sitting for the evening. She could not read much of the writing and asked few questions. They were recorded, how-

ever, and I have copied the results as below. Mrs. Smead knew Mrs. B.'s name, but nothing more, save such as came from taking meals together for the week. Mrs. Smead ascertained nothing pertinent about her or her life except that Mrs. B.'s home was in the South. No allusion was made to this or anything apparently related to it in the automatic writing. J. H. H.

\* \* [scrawls.] \* \*

(Will you tell me who is communicating?)

help you think clearly, too [to] think \* \* think clearly. what is it. we are trying to help him talk to you. he has not tried to tell you before. you may [?] unders... [?] what he says. they are trying to think clearly.

(If possible, give me some sign or initial.)

who is it but one that knows you. \* \* now as always.

(Is it Capt. Benton?) [pseudonym]

yes. I must \* \* \* \* you \* \* know? that mother [?] \* \* here that we will \* \* [all?]

(Can you tell me if I have made a wise move in remaining this winter?)

I will tell you that I would ['would' erased.] was always and will be to you what I was when I was with you, yes. I did not want you to leave me you remember that, yes, and why should I now my dear. do not forget me \* \* [pause.] we do not see why it is not \* \* before this, yes. we do wish to be [?] near the [thee] and we can come [sheet changed.] now we can come again before \* \* [comg?] we can think when we are near the [thee] [pause.]

We want to call R \* \* you know us and we want to think with you. you know not how many times we have had to do it. [pause.] we cannot see why you should be cast down. we are helping you and all of your interests my dear. I know [pause.] there are only 3 of us here just now dearer than all you have there and everything to help you \* \* [can ?] you dear could not help what God had otherwise ordained. You must remember that we do not leave you, because we are here. [pause.] father and mother love you just the same daughter as when we were with thee then, yes we do [pause.] do, yes we do mother says so with me [erased apparently because too many signs were written for 'm'] me.

(Will my father live long?)

\* \* J. S. ['S' doubtful.] help you to [?] know [?] me better. [pause.] How \* \* \* \* could J. S. [or L.] \* \* \* \* not all of \* \* we [pause.] can only tell the [thee] now \* \* [last three letters clearly 'hum.']

I wihsi [wish] I could talk to you. I would tell you better not worry. God is \* \* [near] to help you. he will help my Lizzie.

(Lizzie! Who is Lizzie?)

I know I would if I were with you. [pause.] do you think I would have another take your place were you here and I there, my dear, do you [pause.] what I said. I sai.. [pencil ran off sheet.] do you Lizzie think [pause. and scrawl.] I said. do you Lizzie think I could have another take your place with me. [pause.] I would not want to would...

(You never called me Lizzie. Won't you call me by the familiar name you used?)

no. no. I said do you Lizzie think I would have another take Beth you \* \* [erased.] can Say it together and it was what I called you many times. [scrawls.] do you understand. [pause.] Lizzie Beth [pause.] yes. sometimes. [pause.] it is much like it [pause and scrawls.] not this time Pet. we must not be parted now. I do not want it no \* \* [pause.] Precious [pause.] wait [scrawls.] my dearest Sweet girl. I will come to you here soon again and I will try darling this \* \* \* \* \* [pause.] and hard wait for me here [pause.] after the next Sabbath. Soon I will come and to you alone not to another, to you my love [pause.] my... I do not want others [to] talk to you, yes. I must stop \* \* with you. I must go now [scrawl.] I do much of it time we have to rest here. We rest sometimes when we have been near the Earth, but we cannot remain too near it always. C. J. L. [The 'J' might be an attempt at 'P' and the 'L' resembles an 'S' also.] good night, yrs [yours] my Love \* \* [resembles 'dy,' followed by scrawl and pencil running off the sheet.]

The points worthy of interest in this are that Mrs. B.'s name is Elizabeth. But Capt. B. never called her this, Mrs. B. says, and usually called her "Precious," "Love," "Darling," and "Pet," and very often Bessie, which she is generally called by her friends. She was also sometimes called Bess. Several other terms of endearment will be noticed in the record and they were all characteristic of the communicator, he having actually used them. The tone of affection marked in the communications is very characteristic of him. No definite approximation to his own name appears unless the initials at the close may be interpreted as an attempt at this. It is true that Mrs. B. has often felt much depressed.

The "J. S." has no clearly recognizable meaning as the letters have been interpreted. But if the "J." can be taken as a phonetic error for "G." and the "S." for a possible "L," as is often the case, the interpretation here being admittedly

doubtful, we could make the two letters the initials of the communicator's correct name. The later initials "C. J. L.," which are correct, except the "J.," for the correct name, favor the possibility that I have just mentioned.

There is a clear intimation of matrimonial possibilities in the communications and they have this pertinence that Mrs. B. had been approached by some one on this matter.

Mrs. Smead remarked, when she came out of the trance, that she saw a large man very clearly standing near with dark moustache and dark hair. Mr. B. had gray hair and moustache as long as she knew him, but she remarked that his hair and moustache were very black when he was a young man. I have myself been aware of this from her own statements. Mrs. Smead knew nothing of this and much less of the pet names by which Mr. B. called her. In fact, Mrs. Smead could only conjecture that Mrs. B. was a widow from her employment by me. No knowledge of her husband has been imparted to Mrs. Smead, as Mrs. B. has purposely refrained from this in order to test the case. It is true that the three that are most deeply attached to Mrs. B. are deceased.

---

October 17th, 1906.

10.47 a. m. Present J. H. H.

[10.50 hand trembled. 10.52 began to write.]

\* \* [scrawls.] and we come [to] tell you to your [read 'your' and then the 'r' was erased.] yes [pause.] my [read 'may.'] my watch [pause.] you [pause.] know. I thought a great deal of (Yes.) yes and you must [not clear and read 'my' with rising voice.] must have it for your own. I could not [not read] not want another to use it [difficulty in deciphering 'use.'] no

(Good.) yes. (I have kept it for....)

yes yourself.

(I kept it for one of the children.)

[pause.] no you keep it. [pause.]

(Very well.)

I want you to have it.

(Very well, Mary.)

keep it for me.

(All right.) yes. [I here changed the hand and pencil so that the latter could be held more easily.]

yes, you can give them other things, but, yes, but H used it and I always had near me.

(That's right.)

yes, I want it to be near you. (Good.) yes. [pause.]

(Mary may I ask a question?)

[pause.] always you could do it better [erased.] better than

I. [pause.]

[I here reached an article that belonged to the little girl through whom with a trumpet my wife purported to communicate recently and placed it on the table near the writing pad. The object was to test its identity.]

(Do you know what this is on the table?)

\* \* [Scrawls.] \* \* \* \* \* together \* \* \* \* \*

[scrawls.]

(Is it too hard?)

\* \* \* \*

(I don't get the words.)

\* \* it. [pause.] I [?] cannot....help me \* \* [I here quickly removed the article from the table. The hand had been violently trembling all the while.]

(I was trying an important experiment.)

help \* \* \* \* [I here relaxed the muscles of the fingers which were held stiff and fixed the pencil which had been pushed up until it was held almost by the point.] [pause.]

I get nearer you her...here without out it [read 'with it.'] no. [pause.] It troubles me. I recall only a little [I paused at the reading.] a little at once \* \* that I tell you. to [too] many much con...confuses me. So yes

(I will leave it entirely to you.)

it is better. [Long pause.]

[The pause was perhaps caused by my taking some time to fix the sheets of paper so that I could remove them easily when I needed.]

I can go all around and those things are gone that we together liked so much, yes. [pause.] my [here I moved the sheet of prevent superposing and the result was a pause.] Jewels

(Yes I understand.)

[pause.] yes then we brought home little things from Swit

... I cannot spell it.

(Describe that place.)

high moun ... [pencil ran off sheet.] untains there you know.

(All right. that is correct. I wanted it as evidence.)

[pause.] yes [pause.] (That is good.) [pause.]

we had a very [read 'a boy']. no, very pleasant time there, yes.

(Do you remember who was with you?)



perhaps I can tell their names sometime [pause.] \* \*  
[scrawls.] [pause.] I must go again.

(Shall we stop?)

I will come back.

(Good, I'll wait.) [Pause and hand became quiet for three minutes.]

James I an [am] \* \* [erased.] Tell him I cannot stay now.  
It is... tires me. (Yes.) good morning. (Goodbye.) no, morning.  
[Change of handwriting and control with rapid writing.]

She has done well for you, friend Hyslop.

(Who wrote that last sentence?)

R. H.

(Good, how are you?)

\* \* [scrawls.] all right. [scrawls.] yeis [?] we are working [scrawls.] together (Good.) Harmony, yes [pause.] in harmony (Yes.) yes, now [pause.] yes, you understand me better now (Yes.) [pause.] yes, than when I [made like 'I' in Piper case save that the planchette habits of Mrs. Smead's writing turns it into an apparent 'R.' was there (Yes.) \* \* [you ?] [scrawls.] R. H. [written very slowly and the apparent 'H' unfinished.] I will come to you here again ['again' not read at time.] again, yes. [pause.] [I had to fix the hand and pencil.]

(Do not write too fast.) [pause.]

(What were you doing today before you came here?)

helping them as heretofore. (Who?) [scrawls.] R R \* \*  
\* \* R. and R. [read so] P. [made carefully and period inserted.] (P. and R.?) are [?] were [?] with me. [pause.] th... [?] goodbye H. we are going. [hand ceased to write.]

The statement "H. used it" near the beginning of the sitting is not intelligible as it stands.

I have my wife's watch and as said during the sitting had kept it for the oldest daughter. That I might have had it was easily to be guessed. I had one piece of jewelry on the table wrapped in rubber and Mrs. Smead had not seen it. She was in a trance at the time.

It is true also that my wife and I brought some little things home from Switzerland. But we were not there together. She had visited Switzerland a year before I did. Hence I asked who was with her. The answer shows an understanding of my question. It was characteristic of these phenomena that she could not spell it. Secondary personality would have no difficulty.

The appearance of Dr. Hodgson, for so I interpret the initials, R. H., was sudden and characteristic. The change in the mode of communication was interesting, as he seems to have been told by my wife as he came in, to tell me she could not stay. The writing from that point on was rapid as it is in the Piper case with his personality. My wife's had been slow and deliberate. The correction of 'R. and R.' to 'P. and R.' indicated possibly that Pelham and Rector were with him. Addressing me as Hyslop was also a characteristic way of Hodgson's communications through Mrs. Piper, and the reader will observe that this never occurs with any other communicator through Mrs. Smead in reference to me. On the whole the sitting was a good one. The reference to Switzerland was pointed, as I saw what was meant, and the description of its having "high mountains" was what I had in mind when I asked my question. The incident would hardly have been guessed, tho it might have been suggested by the things about the house. There were, in fact, however, no Swiss articles or trinkets about that were visible. They had all been put away.

---

October 18th, 1906.

10.45 a. m. Present J. H. H.

[11. the hand began to tremble and at 11.02 to write. In the meantime Mrs. Smead thought that nothing was going to take place and remarked that she did not feel any influence, and that it had left soon after we sat down.]

[I had gotten the watch which my wife referred to and had placed it on the table wrapped up so that Mrs. Smead could not see it even if she had her eyes open and looking at it. The fact was that she neither had her eyes open nor could have seen the package even if she had.]

\* \* to me [pause.] to me [?]

(Writes too fine. I can't read it.)

[The hand-writing at once became larger.] to [too] much english, [pause.] yes [pause.] about it. [pause.]

(Who says this?)

father (Father?) yes, me. yes you know what I refer to  
(No, I am not certain what you mean.)

yes you do James.

(O yes I know. That is good. All right.) [pause.]

(You got one word of it through years ago.)

\* \* [scrawls.] yes, I know and much more. I will... yes.  
[pause.] they do not all know \* \* [all ?] [pause.] I am glad  
it came to you.

(Yes, take your time and say what you wish.)

[pause.] I have worked with this lady for you before (Yes.)  
yes, several ['several' not finished on same line and hence read  
as 'since.'] several [not read at once, but 'since' repeated.] no,  
sev... [read] yes. times and I have when you were not with  
her.

(Yes, that's right.)

yes, they told me I could not do it but I did try [read 'very.']  
try [line drawn in attempt to erase the first instance.] yes. \* \*  
[erased.] tell me what I said.

(Father I would have to consult my record. I....)  
no, just now.

(I do not recall any special word or statement.)

[pause.] no, you do not understand me.

(Do you mean with reference to the pass sentence?)

no, not that, but what I have just told you now.

(Oh, yes) [I then went back and read the passage which I  
had not read aloud "I have worked with this lady for you before  
several times," etc.]

that is right. (Good.) I took friend R. H. to her.

(Good, that is a good statement.)

yes, not here.

(Yes, that's right. Where was it?)

[pause.] I do not know the name of her home, it was [pause.]

(I did not mean the house, but just the place in general.)

from here it is [pause.] at north... not east or west.

(That's right so far.)

north and east.

(That is right. That will do. It is good evidence.)

what place I do not know.

(No, I expect not.) [pause.] (Have you tried since this to  
communicate with me anywhere else?)

yes, I have tried to, yes, and did you get it. [pause.]

(Yes, I got something. I have forgotten the words, but I  
have my record.)

yes, what I promised you, yes. [pause.]

(I did not get what you promised at that place. Describe it.)

yes, you thought it just after I had stoped [stopped] talking  
to you.

(At that other place?)

I think I am right about [pause.] it [pause.]

(I will look it up.)

I will tell you about [pause.]

(Wait a moment. I must fix the pencil.) [I fixed the pencil which was pushed up to the fingers.]

you asked me to send you about home affairs [affairs] how they kept the outside buildings. yes, do you remember now.

(You said something about outbuildings through this lady.)

yes, that was what I said I promised to, yes.

(I did not get it in the other light, only this one.) no, no, I did not give it there.

(I thought you meant that.)

no, did not want to get mixed up [‘mixed’ read as ‘my’ with rising inflection.] mixed

(Wait a moment until I fix the pencil.)

[The hand was considerably cramped and the pencil again pushed up to the fingers. I fixed them so that the writing would be easier.]

it is not right. [pause.]

(Wait a moment.) [I again fixed the pencil.] [pause.]

I did [pause.] want to tell you [pause.] about [pause.] H. coming through this lady (Good.) before others could. did you get it. [pause.]

(The message was very small.) yes, (The lady saw Hodgson.)

I know all about it. we did it [‘did’ read as ‘heard’ at the time.] no, we did it together.

(She also saw an apparition of me.) \* \* \* \* [apparently ‘that was,’ except that a letter ‘t’ was made and crossed after finishing the second word which might make it ‘both.’] [pause.] due to R. H. speaking to her. [‘due’ read as ‘done’ doubtfully.] no, no, no. D U E to her, yes.

(Good.) [pause.] (It was an important fact.)

good I am glad we tried it [not read at time.]

(I did not get the last three words.)

I am glad we tried it. [pause.]

(Hodgson told me through the other light that he came and ... with you and got your name through. That was good evidence.)

of her honesty [not read at time.] Honesty yes, o F H E R [read and spelled ‘E H E R.’] o F. Say it together, of her honesty.

(Oh yes.) [Read the passage: ‘I am glad we tried it of her honesty.’] [pause.]

(Let me fix the pencil.) [The pencil fixed.]

you will see what I said more clearly later.

(Good, go on.)

yes, you see you think and I answer and then [when ?] you do not say it [scrawls erased.] rightly it confuses me.

(I understand. Take your own way.) [pause.]

I have been no an [one] , no, several places with you. (Yes.) did you get it?

(Yes, I got your name and some things which I would have to see my record to recall.)

yes, I always give my name [not read at time.] give my name to you, yes.

(Was any one of the relatives with you?)

there [not read] was at one place an uncle [pause.] there, yes. [pause.] (Good.) [pause.] he could not to much, do much. [pause.] but try [pause.] for he does not understand yet. [pause.]

(Which uncle?) it \* \* [erased.] was the last one that came here.

(I know who that is.) yes [pause.]

(Did any other uncle try away from here?)

yes, [pause.] yes, [the pencil changed.] the largr [larger, not read.] one did largr [larger] yes, [pause.] yes, you know who I mean.

(Did he hear me?)

yes, but he had [read as 'did,' and the hand at once underscoring it several times to erase.] hayes [had yes] [I had suddenly read the word.] trouble to make you hear him (Yes.) [pause.]

(Did an aunt try who passed out recently?) [scrawls.] \* \* [possibly 'we were.'] to tell you about it soon but [not read at time.] we were to tell you soon but you said it.

(Good, I understand.)

[pause.] we try to get things right, yes, and we have to work slowly, yes.

(Let me change the pencil.) no. (I can't read the writing.) [pencil changed.]

Lida [not clear and not read at time, but read as 'did.'] you refer to. [At this point 'Lida' read as 'did.'] no, Lydia, yes.

(Good, that is right exactly.) yes he got it and it is [as, and read so.] good [pause.] is yes, [pause.] I am afraid I cannot stay longer. Good morning.

(All right, father. I want to have a strange lady here tomorrow. Can you help her friend?)

I will try if I can [pause.] R. H., yes.

(Goodby, father. God bless you.)

yes my son. [Pencil then dropped from the fingers as it does in the case of Mrs. Piper.]

This was a remarkably good sitting. It soon became evident to me that the reference to "too much English here" was to the difficulty of giving the pass sentence. That is what was evidently in mind on any theory of the phenomena.

All that is said with reference to coming through "this lady," Mrs. Smead, is true enough, but explicable by secondary personality. There is nothing evidential in the statement that he took "R. H." there at once, as Mrs. Smead knows the record at that time. But Dr. Hodgson in a sitting with Mrs. Piper said that he had come through this case with my father. The reason assigned for it is most interesting. I did not see it at the time. Apparently the communicator did not find it necessary to repeat my word "evidence" and wrote "of her honesty" after it to show his appreciation of the importance of getting it through at once. The direction of the place from here was correctly given. That, of course, is explicable by secondary personality, but on that view of the passage I should have gotten the name of the place.

The facts regarding the apparition of myself are these, as recorded in an earlier record. After Dr. Hodgson's death and before Mrs. Smead had learned the fact normally she had an apparition of him and several of me. She thought that it was I that was dead. It was this incident that I had in mind when I referred to the apparition of myself in this sitting. The rest explains itself.

The reference to "out-buildings" has not been made elsewhere at sittings when I was present or was able to decipher the messages.

But when I was leaving Mr. Smead's after a sitting many months previous to this I had requested my father that he some time tell me about the barn and other buildings. At a later sitting a tolerably fair intimation of the barn was drawn and some of its details correctly indicated. Apparently this incident is what is in mind when the communicator tells me I had asked for this.

The description of two uncles is correct. One of them, however, is known to Mrs. Smead by my Piper Report, or could have been known. The other, however, has never

been mentioned by me since his death, and the description of him as "the larger" is correct. The best incident, however, was the name Lida or Lydia. This was to an aunt that died last spring on the Pacific coast. Not more than three persons in New York City know it, I being the only person in the house that knows it. I got a reference to her with name and relationship and name of her husband, my uncle, through a medium in West Virginia recently. This instance is good confirmation of that. If I had not gotten the name so promptly here I could have attached no importance to any general reference to her, as I had myself asked my question with an implication of her relation to me.

In its psychological features the sitting is a most excellent one. It had the ring of the genuine in other cases. I notice a decided resemblance to the *modus operandi* of the Piper case, which is not known to Mrs. Smead in the distinctive feature which I have in mind, namely, the mode of making a message clear and the general psychological resemblances, with even an occasional word not used by Mrs. Smead. "Mixed" and "confused" are Piper words.

---

October 19, 1907.

10.30. Present at first Mrs. B. and J. H. H.

I had arranged yesterday for a sitting for Mrs. B. and it was my intention to be present to read the writing. Anticipating that my presence might not be wanted I wrote out a statement while Mrs. Smead was going into the trance. It was an explanation of my presence and said that I would leave if it were so desired. When my wife left the thought that I had in mind was apparently recognized in the immediate statement that the communicator wanted to be alone. I left immediately.

[10.36 hand began to tremble. 10.39 to write.]

We [pause] [scrawls.] are hear [here.]

(Good. Glad to meet you.) [pause.] yes. [pause.] [scrawls.]

I cannot, tell him so for me, father, yes [pause.] Mary said that to you James.



(Cannot tell who?) you (Cannot tell me. All right.)  
what you want to know, yes.

(What is it that I want to know?) you [pause.] (What about?)

decide [not read] (That word again.) my coming to you.  
['coming' read 'concerning.'] no, coming nearer to you.

(Good, Mary. I made an arrangement for this lady's friend  
to communicate today.)

[pause.] yes, \* \* [scrawls.] father told me so, but I wanted  
to tell you [pause.] about what you asked me.

(Shall I ask the lady to go out?)

you must decide all mater [matter] is ['is' erased.] for you  
to decide, yes. [I here asked Mrs. B. to leave the room which  
she did.]

(Can you give the message again?)

[pause.] not for a [pause.] no until after another Sabbath  
day, yes. [pause.]

(Are you willing to wait?)

[pause.] if you wish it, James. I will try to be patient, yes.

(I arranged for this lady's friend, so I think I should keep my  
engagement.)

not her friend, but her relative. (Yes.) yes, goodby James.

[The hand paused and I called Mrs. B. into the room. There  
was some evident change of influence, but there was no tendency  
of the hand to drop the pencil.]

now you should leave her alone. her husband would talk to  
her, prays Leave us alone. he [pause.] would converse with  
her privately.

[I immediately left the room at this point.]

(Are you here, dearest?)

yes, we would be happy once more on \* \* anniversary day,  
cloudy one that would mean much to us.

(Did you remember it, dearest?)

yes, [Mrs B. began to sob.] and do not weep, we did not  
then dearest. do not, you must not weep. you have, but you  
forget we are not separated, only a cloud between us. I would  
not leave you.

(Please write that more clearly.)

not for anything. I try to tell you before you make mistakes,  
but you, my dearest, do not always think. it is I that is h...  
[erased] trying to help you. [pause.]

life for you is not a burden, as you think, my dear. I do not  
want you to be sad. It troubles me here.

(Does it make you unhappy when I am unhappy?)

yes, my girly: not this morning.

(Are you alone, or are any of the others with you?)

I came for you. I will bring mother another time. I wanted to be alone as we were on that other day.

(How many years ago is it? Can you give me the date of our wedding day?)

not years come here. not that way after we come here. it is only like the present with us. [pause.] we do not [superposed on previous line.] we do not get sad only when our earth friends weep.

(Well, how can I help it when it brings you so near to me?)

you are near [scrawly] always mine. [pause.] nearer than all other friends. [pause.]

(Friends, dearest. Would you class me as a friend? Am I not your wife as much now as I ever was?)

why should you ask me. I had no other love but you.

(Is it only love that counts on that side?)

it is love here, yes, continued from the earth.

(Please make that word clear, because I can't read it.) continued.

(I don't still get it. Write it more distinctly.)

continued.

(Is that 'contuned'?)

no, no, now, no continued... ('Continued.') yes used.

(Do the others feel the same way?)

no u... yes, yes, here. [pause.] they know we love here and it would comfort them to know they are [?] [apparently written as if it were intended for 'they're.'] they [erased.] there [probably meant for 'their.'] friends are very happy and busy learning the higher ways of life.

(Would you like me to send the people at home a message?)

no, we come to you.

(Are you close to me, close enough for me to feel you?)

I think you ought to have (What's that?) ought... long before this. I have been so near...

(Will I see you personally?)

I will try. this lady saw me you... for you. She saw me with my riding suit. yo... [pencil ran off sheet.] Suit on. you remember my gray mixed one. [pause.] yes [?] I will try to have one when I come to you. on...you in...at you[r] home. it is where you live and sleep. I can see you there.

(Do I have to stay at that horrid room all winter? When will I get out of it and get comfortably fixed?)

\*\* [scrawls.] I help to help you to [too] my dear. [pause.] Wait a short time.

(.....) [Question private and omitted.]

I will tell you another time. I will send you my thoughts.

[Several lines private and personal here and hence omitted.]

(Are you willing for me to marry again at all?)

I cannot give you to another, no. can you do it. it will be hard for you to say it, so I do not. you my [apparently attempt to start 'must' and erased.] must know how you would feel about my love, mine. ['mine' indistinct.] and you can never love your friend Charley H. as you do ['do' erased.] did me. does he know you cannot love him. then should you do it. it is. it is love that makes happiness, my dear, and so could you love another through \* \* [scrawl.] the kind of trials we had, my dear. could you endure them with with another, such trials ['t' crossed.] could you.

(Yes, but my love never failed you through it all.)

but that was mine.

(What's that word?)

mine. [first 'mine' erased.] my love to... for you, my dear. helped [letters are 'helhed.'] yes, it does not. God will care for you my Bessie. [Mrs. B. sobbed again.] do not cry, do not weep. I will not leave you.

(Will I see you myself?)

with my riding suit, you can see it [pause.] does it help you for me to come to you.

(Oh yes, yes. But I want you to come to me personally.)

I will if you wish it.

(Has Fontaine still your watch?)

why did you let him have it and my ring [pause.] did you give my studs to him [pause.] no.

[Fontaine was Mr. B.'s son and Mrs. B. had given him the ring and the watch, but not the studs. This latter here seems to have been spontaneously recognized.]

(Because I thought you would like me to do it. I thought you would like Fontaine to have your watch and ring.)

well never mind. I wanted my dear wife to keep them all.

(That would have been selfish.)

yes, it would have been better against a rainy day.

(What is that word up there? Is it 'any most?')

no, a g a i n s t.

(Oh, yes, against.)

yes, you know we used to talk about it. [pause.] and [pause.] happier on [pencil ran off sheet.] So it should be only to you today, my love. I do not want to talk to any one else. We went alone that day and on the cayes [southern pronunciation for 'cars,' often spelled 'cyahs.'] [pause and apparent excitement.] you know [pause.] your mother did not want to part with her daughter, but we were so happy.

(Who else was at our wedding?)

[confusion and scrawls in which apparent attempts at the letter 'o' are evident.] ouch [common expression among the ne-

groes, but was a specially common one with an old negro servant of the family. He prepared the wedding luncheon.]

he says, Law Missie. [Mrs. B. again broke down sobbing.] don't cry. [pause.] it is no time for weeping, but you must be like as that other day. [pause.] yes [pause.] we do not want you to weep.

(Oh, is that Amos?)

[excitement.] yes, they know [pause.] \* \* [apparently something about going.] it is time, this friend says. no I will kiss my sweetheart [sweetheart.] and go. [pause.] I would talk more now, but I must go. I do not want to go. go. keep my words for your comfort: for you know my love. I cannot want you to give it to ot [?] [erased apparently.] yes, others, my words. I said not my love. C [pause.] [pencil goes back and begins again superposing on 'C.'] Capten. [His name was Captain Benton.]

It was Mr. and Mrs. B.'s wedding anniversary. Mrs. B. remarked it to me in the morning, and had not thought of it before. Mrs. Smead knew nothing whatever of this fact, as Mrs. B. had not thought of it herself until she arrived and Mrs. Smead was then in her room upstairs. The mental attitude, the expressions "my girly," "dearest," "my love," "mine," etc., were all characteristic. The allusion to trouble was true. Mrs. B.'s account of that to me makes it specially pertinent. More characteristic and important was the phrase "against a rainy day" as it had often been used in just such connections by Mr. B. The gray riding suit was also one that he wore, and was "mixed," or mottled, as Mrs. B. described it. The name "Charley H." was most significant. Not less evidential was the reference to Amos, name not given, the old negro servant. He had officiated at the wedding and was a favorite of the family. He was very much attached to Mrs. B. Mr. and Mrs. B. took a trip on the cars after the wedding, and to find it pronounced in the southern style is most interesting. Mrs. Smead knew that Mrs. B. came from the South, but knew nothing of her affairs. All the incidents that I have named were not known to Mrs. Smead and could not be known. I myself knew Mrs. B. for more than a year and have been very intimate with her, as this record shows, and I knew nothing of them. He was called Captain, a fact not known to Mrs. Smead, tho Mrs. B.

once addressed the communicator as Capt. Benton, and tho once I heard her remark at the table in telling a story about a dangerous situation in which she was placed, that a faithful servant had addressed her as he usually did as Miss Cap'n. I noted at the time that it might have been recognized, but think it was not so observed in fact. But it is not necessary to press this on either side when so many important facts were wholly unknown.

Mrs. B. was exhausted after the sitting, as I was always tired after sittings that I had. I felt no weariness this day. I was, of course, not present. But I have noticed that the weariness is apparently wholly out of proportion to the actual labor involved, just as I noticed the fact in the experiments with Mrs. Piper.

---

October 20th, 1906.

10.42 a. m. Present J. H. H.

I had asked one of the ladies who has had many Piper sittings to take the sitting to-day, and at the last moment she was not able to be present. This preliminary remark will explain one reference in the record.

[10.46 hand began to tremble and at 10.49 to write.]

\* \* [scrawls.] y... yes, [pause.] nearer. [pause.] we [pause.] are coming nearer him [read first as 'here' and then 'him.'] yes, both. (Good.)

Mary [written slowly.]

(Good morning, Mary.) She is not here tis [erased.] this morning. after the Sabbath [pause.] she comes to you again. [pause.] (Good.) yes it is I...

[I here took away my wife's watch which I had laid on the table and placed my father's articles on the table.]

take it away.

(Do you want your articles?)

near here [pause.] this will.. So my pencil has not been sharpened for some time James. cannot you do it.

(I sharpened it this morning.) no, not my own.

[Just before the sitting I had sharpened the pencil that was used yesterday and worn completely to the wood.]

you see to it my son, yes.

(All right, wait a moment.) [pause.] (Let me change pencils.) [I put in the hand the pencil used before.]

I used to write with it when with friends over there with you, yes.

(Yes, that was at the other light.)

Yes you, ys [yes] and at home. [I here opened the spectacle case in which his old gold pen was lying.] yes. pause. I can [can] not hold it like this. I did not hold it like this, no. I took it nearer my thumb, yes. [pause.] you know how I did it.

(Let me fix it the best I can.)

[I here adjusted the pencil a little better so that the thumb would not be forced under the first finger as it was.]

I cannot use it this way now [?] but I did not mean that. I had reference James to when I was on earth. (Good.) I held it with my first finger and thumb, not this way. yes, you know ['w' written first and then 'k' superposed on it.]

(Let me change it.)

no. (Let me change it.)

[I then took the pencil out and placed it between the thumb and first finger, just as the communicator intimated. It was in fact the way my father used to hold his pen. The handwriting at once changed and became easy, deliberate and much clearer with the words wholly separated as in the Piper case.]

that is the way I used to [used to] use it.

(Yes you did.)

[The pencil paused and the fingers were pushed slowly down the side of the pencil until they got nearer the paper.]

I did my writing carefully, James. I did not like to hurry through life. no... now we have to hurry so when we come back, we have so little [scrawl like 'u' or two 't's' written and erased.] time to use. yes, but I am trying to control my patience and to see if I can not do more and better for you.

(You are doing finely today.)

do you not think... [pause.]

(Yes, you are right. You are doing well: better than ever before.)

some one spoke to me quickly and I almost lost my control. [pause.]

your friend Hodgson, yes, said to try it this way. he said to keep cool, work slowly and in the end more could be accomplished rightly.

(Yes, that's right. That's just like him.)

it is very hard to want to say all at once.

(Yes. Let me change pencils again.)

no, I take my own things best.

(Can you wait for me to sharpen it?)

not now. I will go away and then you may, and I will come back.

(Good.) [Hand stopped writing.]

[I took out the pencil, sharpened it, and returned it to its place between the first finger and thumb as before.]

it is so H. [not read.] is so [then read as 'his so H.'] **no, no.** Hodgson is so kn<sup>d</sup> [kind] about helping us ud [erased.] understanding these new ways.

["U. D." is a symbol constantly used in the automatic writing of Mrs. Piper by the trance personalities for the word "understand."]

(Yes, I understand. It is like him.)

[pause.] he said that when we were over anxious to talk ['to' not read.] you sometimes did not get it what we said.

(Yes, that is true.)

so I will try to kep [keep] quieter. you know how hard that will be for me.

(Yes, it will be very hard over there. You used to do it very well here.)

at that other light I used to get very nervous and frequently had to leave you to get control of myself.

(Yes, I understand.)

so I will try here not to do it. Mary was sorry she could not stay with you but is as I knew she would be when she knew that we could really talk. so anxious to hve [have.] you know it.

(Yes, father, I was very sorry she could not remain. I expected another today.)

yes, I know the lady could not come. [pause.] we do not usually work on this day.

(That's right.)

it is better not to as you know the preparation for the Sabbath has to be and we all worship on that day. I was very strict about it (Yes.) when you were a boy. I did not like you to work on the Lord's Day.

(Yes, that is correct.)

[pause.] and we still have our desires to do right. Everything that can should be done. it is our day of resst [rest.]

(Yes, I thought that custom applied only to the other light. It does not hurt this one here, and so I have used all the time I could.)

yes, but we get get accustomed to our ways of working that is it. do you think I shall soon get my earthly habits changed so that (After earthly?) ['habits' not read.] (habits)

(Good, I got it.)

[pause.] so that when I return they will not be as memory [then 'ies' was written over 'y.'] of the past should be. [Sheet changed.] not I... just.



(All right. I see.)

[I had read the previous sentence as if 'past' was the last word and kept the rising inflection on 'should be.' Hence I read the sentence aloud correctly and the hand at once went on.]

I always had the boy take care [I read 'boy' as written and the hand corrected it spontaneously.] (boys) of their clothes and especially their boots for the Sabbath.

(Yes, that's good. I remember.)

when it was not pleasant that we could go to the meeting house I used to read the sermons at home for the family. (Yes.) in the sitting room we gathered for worship, you remember, James.

(Yes, I remember that. Have you ever mentioned that elsewhere?) not just like this time.

(That's correct.)

I always help [read so at first, when it was erased, and then I said 'keep.'] (no) held the family [family] bible on my lap while I read from it to my family the discourses. , yes, what you referred to at the other light was the singing par. [read 'for' which was then erased, and the hand wrote.] part. [pause, and excitement.] yes, I did not tell you all of it there. I must go now. it is time. [an hour to the minute.] I shall come with Mary n. . on [superposed on 'n.' on the first day after ['after' not read until it began to be rewritten.] af... , yes. goodbye \* \* \* [scrawls.] James.

(Yes, father I can give Mary only a brief time, as I arranged for another friend to be present on that day.)

then I will tell her she had better wait, shall I. \* \* [erased.] [I had read the words "shall I" without the rising inflection and the hand proceeded to rewrite it.] Shall I. [I understood and read it as a question.] goodbye \* \* [scrawls.] [Hand stopped writing and in a few minutes Mrs Smead came out of the trance with a sigh as usual.]

After Mrs. Smead came out of the trance she complained of not being able to see with the left eye and of a pain in the side. It was some ten minutes before she could see with the left eye and a much longer time before she could see clearly with it. A pain was noticeable in it all afternoon. My father, I think, had trouble with the left eye. I am certain it was one of them, as the fact is alluded to in my Report on the Piper case (*Proceedings of the S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI).

The sitting is in almost every respect a most remarkable one. It represents a complete change in the apparent *modus*

*operandi* of the writing, and the identity of it with what goes on in the Piper case most striking. This characteristic was especially noticeable in the use of parenthesis at places, a practice never before used in this case, but very constant in certain situations in the Piper case.

The use of the word Sabbath too was characteristic of my father, and not of Mrs. Smead, who habitually speaks of the day as Sunday. But she knows that the trance personalities in the Piper case used it.

The most interesting episode in the sitting was the allusion to the way of holding the pencil and the statement that I had not sharpened it. As I said in the sitting, I had sharpened it, but it was the pencil that the communicator had used the previous day. So I got the pencil which my father had used before. Mrs. Smead knew nothing of this and the fact coincides with another circumstance not known to the public in the Piper case, namely, the fact that a pencil is often thrown from the hand when there is a change of communicator. Apparently some influence from the "other side" remains on pencils or articles used by communicators that they can identify.

The pointed nature of the messages about holding the pencil will be perfectly apparent to the reader of the record. My father did hold his pen and pencil as he describes, and Mrs. Smead knew nothing of the fact. I had been accustomed in this and the Piper case to place the pencil, or rather Mrs. Smead herself had been accustomed to placing the pencil between the first and second fingers. It was curious to see the change of style in the handwriting. It became slow and deliberate and changed its form somewhat. A few minutes before the words began to be separated. That is, the planchette habit of joining all words, was stopped, and the writing, too, the general form of ordinary writing. The hand and arm too were more easily moved than before.

The allusion to Dr. Hodgson's advice has some characteristic and evidential value. Dr. Hodgson, after the advice of George Pelham in his communications, did constantly remind communicators that they should keep cool and not feel so anxious. And by the way, the term anxious was written

exactly as it was in the Piper case, namely, with a slight space between 'x' and 'i.' Mrs. Smead knew nothing of this or of the habit of Dr. Hodgson. She might have seen some statement in my Report to that effect, but she has, in fact, not read that Report. She has only heard it talked about, and while I have myself used the terms "keep calm" to excited communicators in her case its association with Dr. Hodgson is so natural and so free from evidences of secondary personality that I am inclined to give it some weight in the count.

The account of his relation to the Sabbath is perfectly accurate. My father was very strict in the observance of the Sabbath, and he always insisted, as I explained in my Report, on using that term, Mrs. Smead knowing this fact. But the undoubted piece of evidence in this connection is the reference to the care which he always took about our clothes and boots, in preparation for Sabbath. He would never allow us to black our boots on Sunday, and if any special attention to our clothes was required this had to be done Saturday night, as was our boot blacking. I never knew this to be true of any other family, but think it frequent, nevertheless, in certain small sects. The word "especially," distinguishing between his habit about clothes and that about boots, as he was more strict about our boot blacking than about fixing our clothes. Not less interesting, too, is the use of boots rather than shoes. His most natural expression would be "boots" as we always wore boots and not shoes in the country when we were boys.

The reference to our not going to church when various circumstances made it impossible to go and his habit of reading the Bible on his lap and discourses to the family is perfectly true. But the fact was mentioned through Mrs. Piper, in a vague way, tho the two incidents were not connected there except in my notes. On this account I cannot treat the circumstances as evidence and but for the fact that Mrs. Smead has otherwise given evidence of the supernatural and shows no traces of fraudulent habits, we might quote the coincidence as an evidence of dubious actions. I shall not de-

send it against suspicion, tho I do not grant that it is justly attributable to doubtful practices.

---

October 22nd, 1906.

10.18 a. m. Present J. H. H. and Mr. M.

I had previously arranged to have Mr. G. L. M. present for this sitting, but the anxiety of my wife to communicate led me to begin the sitting fifteen minutes earlier to give her a brief opportunity to say what she wished. The sitting, therefore, began fifteen minutes before the regular hour. Mr. M. came later and his admission will be marked in its place.

Before the experiment began Mrs. Smead told me of an experience this morning when she came into the room to make my little boy's bed. She felt a choking sensation. Afterward she felt something back of her eyes and as if her head was whirling. She had to stand still and shut her eyes until it passed away. J. H. H.

[10.22 hand began to tremble and at 10.24 it began to write.]  
 \* \* \* [scrawls.] H. \* \* \* \* [scrawls with letter 'y' legible.]  
 [pause.]

(Not clear yet.)

do you want Mary this time James.

(Yes, for a short time. I expect a man a little later.)

[pause.] good morning James.

(Good morning Mary. I am glad to meet you.)

I thought you did not want me this time.

(Yes, for a short time only and I will tell you when to stop.)

[pause.]

is father coming to me soon, yes, I told you.

(Yes, I think so.)

yes. I wanted to talk to him ['him' first read 'when' and then quickly corrected.] yes [pause.]

(He is not able.)

I know now, but I wanted to talk to him. [pause.] I will need to watch him c a r e f u l l y. (Yes.) yes. [pause.] I wish he could believe I come near to him.

(Have you been there?)

I go often.

(Did any one see you?)

I tried to have them know it was me. I watch with him much.

(Does any one else watch with you?)

yes, (Who?) my mother \* \* [erased.] could not help it. [apparently in explanation of the scrawl and erasure.] she [pause.] does not want to leave him alone. (Good.) she stays so near that we have to tell her to go and rest. (Yes.) yes.

(I understand.)

She cares more than others do for him. (Yes, I understand.) yes, it was hard for him to have her come here, but she knows all about it. (Yes.) she stays so near that she cannot help knowing all about him. [pause.] when I come here she is with him. ['with' not read.] with. they will be so happy together just as soon as he can leave, yes.

(Yes, I think so.)

then he will come to tell you at once of his mistake in not believing of us. [pause.]

[I arose here and put out the gas grate light which had been lit to warm the room.]

why I wanted him to know is that we can make his passage over more calm, yes.

(Yes, Mary, the doctors would not permit me to tell him this.)

then I must try to make him know because it was so hard for me. I cannot have him suffer. it is all wrong [not read rightly.] no [suddenly read rightly.] to keep knowledge of our life from him on [erased.] or others.

(Yes, I think so.)

[pause.] they must tell him.

(I will send this message to a friend and tell him to tell father this.)

[pause.] yes, he must know that I wish it, yes. I do not like father to suffer in coming here.

(I will do all I can.)

we will too.

(Yes, I believe it.)

you know I want him to ['want' read as 'went'] no.

(Do you know where I have been?)

[I had quietly slipped over to Philadelphia in the morning of the previous day to see how Mr. Hall was, and returned the same evening.]

I went with you there. [pause.] [The door bell rang.] I know I must soon leave you.

(Yes, the gentleman is here and will come up at once.)

[pause.] ...go then.

(Goodbye until the next time.)

take this pencil away. [I changed the pencil.] [Mr. M. came in and took his place near the table at my right.]

(Shall I leave the room and let the gentleman remain alone?) we will tell you when we go to go. [pause.]

[I here removed my wife's watch which had been placed on the table to hold her, and placed my father's articles there. On turning to look at the writing I saw a reference to Hodgson.]

fix us hodson's way. way.

[I removed my father's articles and placed Hodgson's on the table when I bethought myself that it was the changing of the pencil that was meant. I then changed the pencil to between the first and second fingers, having previously fixed it between the first finger and the thumb. It is held between the two fingers by Mrs. Piper.]

yes, and his way of holding us.

[Asked Mr. M. to place an article on the table. He placed a pipe on the table.]

yes \* \* [scrawls.] this [?] \* \* pleased [read 'pleases.'] to come \* \* [scrawls] he [followed by fine scrawls.] pleased to come. he say not to use so much, no, as much of the weed as he did. [pause.] yes it injures [pause.] the nervous system [pause.] and [pause.] it [pause.] hurts the heart. [pause.] [scrawls.] well we are \* \* \* [pause.]

he says he has seen this friend before [pause.] yes, here in [the] city. [pause.] yes, [scrawls.] and is [scrawls.] glad to greet him. [pause, and scrawls.]

(Mr. M.: I am glad to greet you and hope you will give me some messages from the friend who owned this article.) [pause.]

you must not get too [written 'to'] sceptical [scrawls and pause.] th... [pencil ran off sheet and then erased.] if we do not at first... [pencil badly worn.]

(Let me fix the pencil.) [I replaced it with a fresh one.] [pause.]

the one you wish to have speak is timid [not read at time.] about, no is timid about talking. [all but 'timid' read.] no, yes. [evidently in answer to right reading of the word 'talking'] is timid [not read.] [pause.] T I M I D, yes about talking this way. [pause.]

(Yes, I understand. That person will get used to it.)

yes, we know. [pause.] the friend has no [has no] [not read at time.] The friend has [not read] not. no h a s. [pause.] been over here very long. [Long pause and hand trembled slightly.]

will come back [not read at time.] no, we will come back when you go out. [J. H. H. then left the room and left Mr. M. alone.]

your friend says that her back does not trouble her now. [pause.] now [pause.] now [pause.] you must [scrawly.] be

careful and must [probably intended for 'must.'] not talk to [too.] much with your friends about [pause.] this work. they [pause.] will think you [pause.] are not doing right [pause.] as most of them do not believe in us.

you you would like your friend's name [correct.] but that is uppermost in your thoughts [correct.] and not as good a test as we should ask for, but you have had such experiences before [correct.] and know it is not wise.

the lady that is sick will [pause.] no [pause.] not get any better over [there.] your friend says to tell you that sh...he [she] is coming over here soon, yes. [pause.] she is very sick now [pause.] y... Mrs. P. thinks here [her] work here in this city is wonderful, but you know better.

(Let me fix the pencil.)

[The pencil was moved down so that the fingers would not rest on the paper.]

yes that lady that your friend says is so sick. She said [scrawls.] nt [not] keep on her right side. we will go and see if we can come \* \* [see or and] see her room for you. your friend [pause.]

the dresser is opposite the door and [pencil fixed again as before.] it is and it is white. the chair next to it is white. also the bed is, no yes. a white one, yes and there are breasst [breast] rings on it. \* \* what I saw there was a tray with rings on it, yes, and [pause.] one of them... one of them you gave her. [pause.]

yes, [pause.] it is in a flat, not in a country home. [pause.] no [pause.] where she is sick. do you here [hear] it.

(No, I don't get it.)

it is in a flat where your friend is so sick. [written much more clearly.] yes. [pause.]

[J. H. H. outside, noticing that the time was up opened the door and remarked the same.]

(It is pretty near time now. Your time is almost up.)

Tell Hyslop, no tell James, my son, to, come here, yes [pause.] before I go. [pause.] go [pause.] please.

(Do you want Prof. Hyslop?)

son James, yes. [pause.]

[J. H. H. listening at the door, came in as soon as this statement was heard. The sitting was closed by him.]

we did not give any names to your friend for wise reasons [pause and scrawls.] and he will find that lady [pause.] yes, [pause.] yes. tell him not to encourage hre [her] 'encourage' not read.] [pause.] cour... [evidently an attempt at 'encourage.] hre [her] yes. [in response to Mr. M.'s reading 'encourage.] en... her. She will not get better over [not read] there over [not read] no, O V E R T H E R E. I will go now.

(Goodby, father.) goo....



I concealed the object of my trip to Philadelphia from every one except my housekeeper. Mrs. Smead knew I was absent, but did not know whither I had gone. She afterward asked if I had gone to Boston to test her work here, and was not told where I had been.

The allusion to the using of "the weed" less was pertinent. Mr. M. uses it less than he did. The reference to the trouble in the back Mr. M. says is relevant. As to talking to his friends about the subject he does not do it a great deal, but he was talking a long time last night to a friend regarding the subject. He does not know of any friend to whom the statements about sickness would apply. The reference to Mrs. P. is relevant tho Mr. M. did not recall it at first, his mind being set on immediate relatives. But he presently thought of a Mrs. P., who is rightly said to be in this city, New York, and is a friend of the person who owned the pipe which had been placed on the table and lives in a flat and not a country house. The statements describing the objects in the flat are at present unverifiable. They do not apply to anything within Mr. M.'s knowledge.

June 8th, 1907.

Mr. M. in reply to inquiries regarding details writes as follows, after answering a number of questions in reference to details.

"I have again read over the record of the sittings, and would say that there is hardly a shred of evidence tending to establish the identity of any deceased person that I have ever known.

"In a number of places in the record reference is made to specific things, which in a considerable percentage of cases, would, some of them at least, have made 'hits.' I mean the reference to the bird, method of dressing hair, color of furniture, etc.

"In my case these references are uniformly irrelevant, as applied to any of my deceased friends, and would, it seems, apply to almost any one else having a number of friends on 'the other side' better than to me.

"It seems to me that the reference to the pipe and to Mrs.

P. are the only things tending to show the supernormal. The pipe, as you may remember, was quite a 'strong' one, but its detection perhaps tends to show hyperaesthesia."

The description of Mrs. P.'s rooms was not correct in its details. She had an apartment house.

October 23rd, 1906.

Present J. H. H. and Mr. M.

10.50 a. m. [10.54 hand trembled. 10.55 wrote.]

Good morning James. [pause.] yes father.

(Yes, father, I am glad to see you.)

[pause.] \* \* [scrawls.] you can have your friend come in for [?] \* \* ['ye' apparently for 'you.' must [pause.] will. [I here called Mr. M.]

will you ask him if he found out about what our message said concerning our friend.

(Yes, he found it all right.)

[pause.] \* \* [scrawls.] we saw her ill [read as 'cannot well.'] no, we saw her ill yes [pause.] [I remarked to Mr. M. that they had to rest.]

she was in ['in' erased.] in that room reclining on the bed [pause.] yes? (Good.) yes, [pause.] as we said, anx... [read 'as.'] no [then erased.] [read 'anxious.'] yes. [Long pause.]

you watch her carefully, for she [read 'see.'] no, she will complain of her head and heart [pause.]

(Father, shall I fix the pencil Hodgson's way?)

no, not for me [pause.] me [pause.] [Pencil then fixed so that the fingers would not rest on paper.]

we are sure [not read correctly: read as *care*.] sure [read as 'care.'] no, sure that she [pause.] will because [read as 'became.'] no [pause.] [suddenly read as because.] the light surrounding [not read.] surrounding the lady friend was very strong yes.

(Good, I got that.)

[pause.] it is not as easy to do for others [pause.] no, it is not as easy to do for this friend as for some others, yes.

(Yes, I think so.)

he does, yes, he does not bring light with him.

(I understand.)

and it is very hard to work for him. [pause.]

(Yes, father, I...)

as you know we have not controlled long [not read] long and it is harder for us.

(Yes, I believe it.)

[pause.] \* \* \* [h... .] [scrawls.]

(I thought I would give him a sitting today and then some later.)

could friend H. we p... be persuaded I could I think help more, but alone \* \* \* [erased.] his friend is not anxious to ['anxious' not read.] anxious to try. (I understand.) [pause.]

(Would it help if I left the room?)

no, it would not make any difference.

(All right.)

as I should have to talk for her [pause.]

[Again I fixed the pencil and there was a pause of 15 minutes. After a few minutes the hand stopped trembling and rested for a few minutes. It then began to tremble again, and again stopped. Again the hand began to tremble and in two minutes was writing.]

[Writing was slow and difficult.] He will not come today and I cannot come alone.

(I understand. Do you mean that we shall stop?)

yes, it is better so.

(Good, very well.)

goodby....

(Goodby, father. We try tomorrow morning with another.)

After Mrs. Smead came out of the trance she said she saw two ladies, one with dark hair and eyes, the other with light hair, laughing as if playing a joke on some one. The dark-haired one had a very white skin and her hair was parted in the middle and wavy on the side. The hair of the other was parted a little on one side and was fussed up.

At 1.35 p. m. Mrs. LeM. all at once felt as if she were being possessed and asked me to bring Mrs. Smead, with the hope that Mrs. Smead might see something. I called Mrs. Smead and as nothing could be seen I suggested a sitting to clear away the influence. We at once went upstairs and Mrs. Smead took the pencil. Mrs. LeM. sat down by the table and I attended to the management of the séance, which was conducted as the usual experiment. The following was the result:

place this other light together next time ['next' not read.] no, next time, yes. both lights, yes, and we wish it for a time [not read.] time [not read.] T I M E, yes, convenient [read 'concerning.'] no con... [suddenly read as 'convenient.'] for our friend Hodgson to come too, yes. [pause.] also [pause.] yes. [wait.] I said [read 'and.'] no, said fix it so that the morning friend could come with these [pause.] yes, lights together.

(All right, I shall do that.)

and for friend Hodgson, yes. [pause.] yes [pause.] do you understand us.

(This friend here today will be here Friday morning.)

\* \* \* \* \* yes friend

(Do you want him tomorrow morning?)

no, call him [not read at time.] morning friend, call him morning friend, yes. (Good.) the lady suffers so she says she cannot [cannot.] She cannot work for him over here on our side, yes. (Good.) all right [pause.] thanking you James.

(Yes, I understand father. Thank you.)

New York, Oct. 23rd, 1906.

Mrs. LeM. has just remarked to me that while I was upstairs at my experiment she had a very strong impression that she should come up, and actually got up from her chair once to do so, but refrained. Interrogation of her showed that it was just before we came down stairs. This made her feeling coincide with the long pause and close of the sitting when there was great difficulty in having the communications.

JAMES H. HYSLOP.

The following is Mrs. LeM.'s own account of the feelings which prompted us to make the experiment above recorded. I had her write out the story soon afterward.

October 23rd, 1907.

A man appeared for a sitting with Mrs. Smead at Dr. H's home. I had seen him once before, having let him in the house the day before. I had an uncomfortable feeling when I let him in. The second time he came, that is, on the present date, I did not see him at all. He was admitted by Dr. H. who took him up stairs. From the moment of his arrival I was most uncomfortable and during the time of the sitting with Mrs. Smead I had hard work to keep out of the room, so strong was the desire to

intrude. I restrained the influence and went on with my work. Still the influence remained with me, depressing and trying to impress me. But I fought it off with all my might. We had luncheon and then I took a walk. Still the influence tugged at my vitality, and to prevent myself from falling from the chair in which I was sitting, at work with the typewriter, I was obliged to get up. Then I was completely overcome and I called hastily to Dr. H. to call Mrs. Smead, which he did. It seemed almost as if I were dying. When Mrs. S. arrived I asked her if she saw any one, and she answered in the negative. Then I begged her to help me, and Dr. H. suggested that we should go up to the room where the sittings were held. With the assistance of these two I went up stairs, more dead than alive. The impression was of a dark woman in great distress, bodily pain as well as great mental suffering. Mrs. Smead sat and the results of her sitting are recorded. After the sitting the impression entirely left me and I never in my life felt better. As before stated I know absolutely nothing of the man or his history, but of one thing I am *sure*, and that is that there was some cause of great suffering to this woman and that her anxiety to communicate with him is more for his own sake than hers. "There are moments when all would go smoothly and evenly, if only the dead could find out when to come back and be forgiven." I should have stated above that, at the time when the influence was strongest, the discomfort was in the pit of my stomach and in my chest.

E. B. Le M.

Both Mrs. Smead and Mrs. Le M. remarked after this record was made that they thought the woman had suffered from poison. The reader will observe that, at the next sitting by Mr. M., Mrs. Smead's automatic writing contains a reference to poisoning (p. 648). This circumstance carries its own suggestion.

An interesting collective experience which is connected with this man at a later date in a remarkable manner should be recorded here, especially as it is associated with the same apparent presence of a woman in distress. I had Mrs. Le M. and Mr. Carrington make their record of the facts soon after the time of their occurrence.

February 8th, 1907.

On Thursday, Feb. 7th, 1907, while sitting at my desk in the office of Dr. H., engaged with my appointed task, I was very much startled by several loud raps somewhere near me. I cannot say

just where the raps were, for I was so much startled that my direct attention was distracted. I hastily looked around to my right, and there close beside me stood a woman who has appeared to me several times before. Her face wore the same expression of suffering which has always characterized it, and the look of pleading was more pronounced than on former occasions, if that were possible.

I associate this woman with Mr. X. (Mr. M.) who had some sittings with Mrs. Smead when she was in New York, and who was a very disturbing element to me during the time of these sittings. This poor soul seems to have passed out of this life under some terrible conditions of mental suffering, and the presence is of the most frightfully depressing character. She has the most haunting expression of the eyes I ever saw, such beseeching for aid of some kind which I know not how to give. I was rather annoyed by this unexpected appearance of this woman after so long a period had elapsed since her last coming, and wondered what it meant, and I had not seen Mr. X. (Mr. M.) at all in the interval. Dr. H. was out of the room at the time of this happening, conversing with some one in the next room. It occurred to me as possible that Mr. X. (Mr. M.) might be in the room with Dr. H., and I requested Mr. Carrington, who was in the room with me, to go and see who it was in the next room. He reported on his return that Dr. H. was talking with a woman. I could not quite understand this, for never before has this woman come except in association with Mr. X.

When Dr. H. came back to the office I asked him if he had seen Mr. X. lately, and he said he had been in the house that morning. This explained the situation. Perhaps if I had not been so startled and if I had not jumped from my chair, I might have received the impression the woman wished to make me, but after I left the table, the vision vanished, only the terrible feeling of my head and the nausea with which I am always afflicted at such times remained. The face so pale and wonderfully distressed is hard to shake off. I have no impression of clothing or anything material in connection with it. The mental condition was so absorbing and so utterly prostrating to me.

E. B. Le M.

Mr. Carrington writes his account which applies only to the raps which he also heard.

February 8th, 1907.

Yesterday morning, about 11 o'clock, I was busy working and thinking of nothing but the matter in hand, Mrs. Le M. also being busy in the same room working. She was sitting slightly behind

me. Suddenly I heard behind me and close to Mrs. Le M. a series of sharp, quick and decisive raps, raps unmistakably and whatever their origin. The sounds were as unlike creaks in wood or furniture as possible. They were raps upon wood, apparently made with bare knuckles, lasting for a space of about two seconds—as nearly as I can remember it—in which time there were probably eight or ten raps. They were about as loud as one would make upon a door, when wishing to enter a room. They were undoubtedly raps and quite unlike any other sound whatever.

When I heard these raps, I looked up expecting to see some one standing in the door, and was surprised to see no one. My attention was then drawn to Mrs. Le M., who was staring straight in front of her, with a drawn and very pained expression on her face. Her eyes seemed watery, as tho she were about to cry. She made no motion for two or three seconds, then, with the remark, 'There are those horrid raps again,' she arose and walked across the room to another chair and sank into it. Mrs. Le M. was breathing rather rapidly, and her eyes were somewhat bloodshot. She seemed to be extremely upset by the occurrence, and in a moment sank her head in her arms, and remained in that position for some little time, volunteering no remark, and requesting me not to speak to her for some moments. She seemed very much disturbed.

I then saw that the raps had some peculiar significance for her, and had induced an emotional crisis. As soon as Mrs. Le M. could talk calmly I asked her to tell me what was the matter, and she replied that she had seen the form of a woman standing beside her, at the moment the raps occurred, and that she had seen the figure before, under peculiar circumstances. Mrs. Le M. also stated that she seemed to "take on" or imbibe the mental condition of the apparition, which was one of intense suffering and anguish. I, of course, saw nothing, and knew nothing about the previous times when this woman had attempted to communicate in a similar manner. I then learned that, on several previous occasions, this woman had attempted to communicate in raps, to the great distress of Mrs. Le M., who was, on each occasion, deeply affected emotionally.

The raps, as I was told, had been loudest when Mrs. Smead was in the house when Dr. H. was experimenting with her some time previously. I was not present at that time, as I had not been engaged in the work until afterward.

The most interesting and significant part of the whole case to me is this. When Mrs. Smead was here, a gentleman had had several sittings with her and it was this man with whom this woman was anxious to communicate. When these raps occurred yesterday, Mrs. Le M. was not aware of his presence, or that he was in the neighborhood. After their occurrence Mrs. Le M.



asked me to walk past the door of the parlor and see whether there was in it a certain man, describing him to me. I did so, and saw no one present but an elderly lady, talking to Dr. H. I returned and told Mrs. Le M. that fact.

Soon afterwards Dr. H. returned and Mrs. Le M. then asked him if that certain man had been there, and Dr. H. replied that he had, and that he had left a short time before. The raps were apparently connected with his presence, tho Mrs. Le M. did not know he was in the house at all and I knew nothing whatever of the story.

All I can vouch for, as the result of personal observation, is the raps, which were unmistakable. They were unlike anything but raps, and sounded, as said above, as if made with bare knuckles on bare wood.

HEREWARD CARRINGTON.

The following is my own record of what I knew in association with the incidents recorded by Mrs. Le M. and Mr. Carrington.

February 8th, 1907.

As soon as I had come into the office, after my interview with the lady who followed Mr. M., Mr. Carrington and Mrs. Le M. told me that they heard raps while I was in the parlor, and Mrs. Le M. mentioned the fact that she had seen an apparition of the lady who was associated with the experience she had during the sittings with Mrs. Smead when Mr. M. was present. She also stated that she had felt nauseated in the same way. I then told her that this man had been present and that my first interview was with him.

It will be worth remarking that I myself met him at the door, and as he entered I turned about to see if Mrs. Le M. saw him come in. She was sitting in a position at her desk, from which she could have observed him, if she had looked that way. But she did not turn to look and in fact I could not see her face at all. I thus carefully noted the fact that she did not see him, tho I had no special reason for thus inspecting the situation. It was a casual impulse, so far as I know.

I did not notice when he went away whether she looked in that direction or not. But if she had she could have seen only his back. I should remark, however, that she might have subliminally heard his voice in his talking with me, tho we said little about his experiences here, in fact, nothing except a reference to the record which I was to send to him. But whatever explanation of Mrs. Le M.'s experiences might be made on the ground of subliminal audition of his voice this will not explain the raps which were

simultaneously heard by Mr. Carrington. I have no proof that there were any subliminal influences from Mr. M.'s voice, especially as we had talked in a very low tone of voice most of the time, and as Mrs. Le M. is usually in quite an abstracted mood of attention at her work she is not easily disturbed normally by sounds, tho perhaps this might be associated with subliminal hyperaesthesia. But while this may have given rise to her experiences, tho I have no proof of the fact, it hardly accounts for the raps, as already remarked, and especially for Mr. Carrington's hearing them. Raps are not habitual features of the work in the office, so that on any view of the incidents reported they seem to have some coincidental relation to the situation.

JAMES H. HYSLOP,

October 24th, 1906.

10.35 a. m. Present Mrs. Quentin; J. H. H. present a few moments at beginning, and came in as the sitting closed.

[10.37 hand trembled and at 10.39 wrote.]

\* \* [possibly 'is H.'s f' ?]

(Wait a moment.) [pencil running off top of sheet.]

yes, we are here [not read.] we are here [not read.] we are here now. [pause.] Tell the lady to [read 'we.'] come nearer. to come nearer, yes and we will try [not read.] try to speake [speak] to her. [pause.] you had better leave us alone and we will tell you when we want you, yes.

(All right. I shall go out and you may write straight on and I can read it afterward.)

[J. H. H. leaves the room.]

\* \* [scrawls.] all right.

(Who is speaking to me?)

\* \* [scrawls.] who sits here asks you [apparently said to the communicator by the control.] \* \* [scrawls.] \* \* [mamma?] my dear

(Can you tell me who you are?)

I am speaking he says. [pause.] you want. I am Mr. Hyslop's father. I help [?] trr [?] [erased.]

(Do you want Dr. Hyslop?)

no, I have to talk for your friends and so your work will need pass through to him. [apparently said to the communicator.] your dear friend is here near you and I hope you will not loose patience with me if I do not make it clear to you for him. [To sitter.]

(Do you remember the ring?)

yes, and I remember when I gave it to you. [pause.] he said that she [?] had it on when hse [she?] came over [?] over [pause.]

(Did you tell me to take it to a medium?)

I \* \* \* \* \* come here to you to this light. with it it is clearer to talk to you.

(Have you been at Grove's Point?)

you can believe [not clear.] where we are now [pause.] \* \* many others. [pause.] you could not as they do not understand \* \* \* [Out?] this [not clear] light in which we come back. it was well to remember, my dear, that we are nearer you.

(I don't understand.)

do you mean when I said about my ring? [or capital E.] do you mean since I told you to bring the ring \* \* [scrawl not like an attempt to make an interrogation point but more like an attempt to make a capital E. which is the initial of the sitter's Christian name.]

(No, have you been there in the past week?)

I go so often [written 'often'] dear that it is hard to tell you just what time you mean. I am there with you and you cannot help knowing when I go.

(Have you seen V. and H. there this week?)

yes, I have. did they know about it. I would that they could see me to [too] it would help them.

(Are you glad they went?)

I am glad for [sheet changed.] for you that they did. I [t] has helped you dear, to have them with you. yes I am glad.

(Is H. with you now?) [H. is sitter's mother.]

not \* \* [this] time. he [she] could not come here yet. [pause.] can you fix this pencil.

[Pencil fixed. The fingers had pushed down till they touched the table.]

(Is that right?)

yes, better, he says that it will come to you another time, but... [sheet changed.]

(Is she near me always?)

not always, my dear, it would not be right to have her stay to [too] near as she will come so often that you cannot help knowing she is near, but that if she was to stay it would hurt [?] her [?] and she would not grow here. she needs for a while to try and get f... [erased.] away from the earth surroundings. [pause.] and so she must be taught about it. we will stay near you and I will come for her, so that you need not fret and worry. I will do it for you and after a short time I will bring her to this lady. then you may talk to her if you wish.

(Do you talk to me myself?)

yes, I talk to you, but do you hear me (Repeat.) I talk to you but do you hear me, dear.

(Yes, often.)

I know ['know' erased.] I kn... [erased.] know you do sometimes and that is why I know you would believe me more could you go to another for light.

(Where must I go for light?)

why here is light as we are those that we can talk through.

(Don't you know I try to go to your side for light?)

from our side over here is what he means friend. [pause.]

yes, and I bring it to you. [pause.] I am with you so much.

I want you to know it. (I do know it.) yes.

(Do you watch the children?)

\* \* [scrawls.] cannot help care for them as I did I am so much with them that you would almost think I had not left them. I do not care so much about going \* \* [now?] as I suppose you might think I loved them, dear, as well as any man could his own. yes you must not think me selfish because I do not want be ['be' erased.] to be thought so. I was not when with you, dear.

(Yes, but had all the dear ones on the other side.)

that did not need to make me selfish. I am here now and could I have Stayed and helped you it would have been better for you and now I want to be what comfort I can. I know it is hard for you, but we cannot always tell on your side I... what is best and then I was so tired.

(Yes, you were tired.) [pause.] (Weren't you glad to see them all when you got there?)

of course I was glad, but not as happy as I would have been could you have come with me.

(But it is not time to come. I have my life to live.)

no, no. I know you do and I will not be selfish if I get tired in doing my part; for I am trying too [to] to overcome my impatience and so I am staying near you to do it. for I could not go away and leave you long.

(Do you see the baby there?)

do you see the baby there, yes I told you I would come for her [?] \* \* \* \* own [?] \* \* ones here and do you doubt [sheet changed.] doubt it [pause.] and of course I do. (And Alice?) I can see them all [?] and we have very fine times together and Alice cm [erased.] came here. [pause.] Alice came here this time. yes, we are together now when you are at home. the little ones could not talk here very well. it would frighten them, but I will tell you, my dear, that I will come again to you [sheet changed.] you at home. have them all with me and you can know it. I will help you to use the pencil if you will sit for me to try.

[Mrs. Quentin had been accustomed to the Ouija board in her

work up to this time. Soon afterwards she tried the pencil and the usual automatic writing developed quite readily.]

(Please write plainly.)

then I could tell you many private things which we cannot say for others. I do talk to your soul.

(Bobby, is he with you?) yes.

(Do you see my mind?)

I have helped. I have helped with them dear and that is why I say I would work with you.

(Are you in sympathy with my recent development?)

yes, how could I do otherwise.

(Am I right to go ahead regardless of opinion?)

as long as you feel my presence. [sheet changed.] presence you need not worry and you could ask that God give you light and he will. I will surely help you.

(Can you give me an identification; something we both know?)

[pause and trembling of the hand for some time.] You know it was hard for me to believe you would develop in this work as I ['I' erased.] you have. [Correct.] I did not more than half believe it, but now I am trying to make you know more of it.

(Yes, I know you did not believe very much in me.)

and now I believe so much that I help you, dear.

(Go on helping. I need it.) [pause.] (What about H.)

I will bring her to you at home. we would not have time here to talk about her.

(Can't you tell me something of H. and V.?)

I wanted to tell you about my helping you, so that you would be more encouraged. [pause.] violet. [not read at first.] V I O L E T, do you mean.

(No, Vernon.)

I thought it was Vera, but he did not tell me clearly. now you should not have said it untill [until] we gave it to you clearly. we are agoing to ask your husband to tell you about them both if he will.

(Can't you give me a message for Vernon?)

I am getting tired as I used to do, dear. you must wait. I will bring H. with me next time and let her try. She will want to when she knows where I have been. you know I wanted more than all else to have you know that I was helping you and you will know more from me at home.

(All right. I am glad you are.)

I must go now, so tell \* \* please that I will come again some other time. if you doubt me I will come \* \* \* \* \* again goodby, my dear. I will tell them all where I have been this morning and we will come to you. goodby be my own \* \* \* \* wife, be brave and it will be good possibly 'well.' for you.

[Change of control.]

(Is that all?)

do you not send some parting greeting to your f.....

[Handwriting was like Chesterfield's.]

There is some confusion in this sitting as to the communicator. Mrs. Quentin assumed that it was a lady. The language at times implies distinctly that it was a man. The correct incidents apply to a lady. The close again makes it appear that it is a man and a husband. The husband of Mrs. Q. is still living. The word "Violet" had some pertinence, as a bunch of violets was put on the coffin of the lady whom Mrs. Quentin supposed to be the communicator. Vera was apparently a mistake on the "other side" in understanding the name Vernon.

Mrs. Quentin writes as follows:—"On reading over the record I feel sure that there were several trying to talk at once, as they have often done with me, when we had to beg them to come one at a time.

"The 'he' I think is that same brother-in-law who came to me in my dream and who died in the prime of life, leaving a wife and five children. It seems perfectly intelligible and pertinent if looked at from this standpoint, and the last may be an attempt to get a message to his wife. It seems as if my grandmother who owned the ring threw in remarks all the way along."—Cf. notes on pp. 663-4.

---

October 25th, 1906.

10.30 a. m. Present Mrs. L., Mr. B. and J. H. H.

Soon after the commencement of the sitting J. H. H. and Mr. B. were sent from the room and Mr. B. called in near the close.

we we are here [pause.] coming here yes. [pause.] wait with us, yes. [pause.] there is a little [not read at time.] child that [pause.] is here, James. (Good.) yes he [read 'the.'] no, he says the music [pause] was hard for him. [pause.] yes. [pause.] and he come [came] to tell this lady [read 'today.'] no, [then suddenly read correctly.] that he could get it better now because the music is easier here. one, 2, 3 [scrawly and not read at the time.] 1 [?] 2, 3.

(Last word again.)

one two three ['two three' read as 'mother' by myself at first then 'brother.'] no [Mrs. L. read it correctly.] [Mrs. L. held her hand a few moments on Mrs. Smead's and it apparently quieted it.] \* \* \* \* one two three. [pause.]

(J. H. H.: Should I leave the room?)

you and the other friend can if you will please James.

[Mr. B. and J. H. H. leave the room. Mrs. L. remains.]

(Is it I you want?)

yes friend [pause.] we will try [pause.] yes if we can.

(Will you try and write the words separately?)

the little boy said near you and would... would like you to have you [pencil ran off sheet.] you speak to him, yes.

(Can he tell me who he is?) [New pencil inserted.]

E D D I E. it sounds like it.

(Does this little boy know me, or does he think he knows me?)

yes, and he did while (Words separately.) there with [pause.] you. [pause.]

(Can you tell me anything about him more or is there anything else you can see?)

he [sheet changed.] [pause.] he [scrawls.] [pause.]

(Write clearer, plainer, please.)

some... there is a lady that say[s] mother [pause.] she [?] [possibly 'he.'] is not connected with that boy, but she knows him and you.

(Write that again please.)

you are too.

(Can you write a little clearer?) thus. she..

tell My Son to come here [pause.] we will talk to him, yes. [pause.] She wishes [?] it. She can [pause.] \* \* [erased.] nearer to the other friend that went out [pause.] (The...) but the boy will stay near you. he said his head troubles \* \* ['him' ?] him here. [pause.] to this side you, yes, he studied [pencil ran off edge.] studied to [too] hard. [apparently not read.] he stu... [apparently read.] yes, and had a fever in the brain. [sheet changed.] head, yes, friend. but the lady says she only went to sleep. [pause.] it was no trouble when she came.

(Does this lady know me?)

yes, but you [r] friend [is] better. she is nearer to [sheet changed.] she is nearer to him [pause.]

(And the little boy—does he know my friend?)

the friend out [?] do you mean. he does, but you better he says. knows you he says better than him.

(Do you want to have an article to see if you can see anything about it, or do you want to see the friend waiting outside? Did you understand?)



you can ask him to come if you wish. we will try to talk to him. [Mr. B. called in. Mr. B. went in at once.]

(Here is the other friend.)

do you tell him what we have told you, yes.

(They have told me that a lady is here who knew you. She went out very quietly: said there was no trouble when she went.)

She said she was mother. called mother, yes. [pause.]

(Who called her mother?)

he did, yes, and [pause.] [Mrs. L. puts hand on Mrs. Smead's wrist.] [writing quieter.] she would have him speak to her. [pause.]

(Mr. B.: Did I call her mother?)

She [pause.] said something about it being so, yes.

(Can she make herself a little clearer?)

she does not think as he did about this, \* \* she \* \* [erased.] he says you would be surprised to see her boy \* \* \* \* this work.

(To see the boy at the work?)

yes, why does he come to here when it is not not necessary. [sheet changed.]

(Not necessary for what?)

y... for his belief in the future [apparently not read.] no, future life. you do not need it thus [this] way of investigation. I mean, yes, you know why I never believed it was right. (I never blamed?) believed it was right. I never did I should have said and not I do not wish you \* \* keep it up, for you to \* \*

(Was it not right?)

nos [no it is] it is not right to [erased.] not to trust it all to the higher powers and not to work alone for light. that is what she says now.

(Who is this speaking? Does she say she is this friend's mother?)

[pause.] now does she say it moth... [pencil ran off sheet.] her if she is not friend. (Tell her.) [To Mr. B.]

(Mr. B.: My mother is with me in this life.)

but she says mother and is near to you.

(Anything more to say? It is about time to close the light.)

I guess she is not clear in her mind for she will not say but that she is or was called mother. she is an elderly lady and perhaps it will help you to know her... [sheet changed.] she wears a black gown and quite a wide white necktie embroidered at the points. she also has a black lace cap on and a brown and white pin cameo they [sheet changed] they call it. she has it on the tie \* \* yes,

(She used to wear it?)

on the tie and sometimes she had a white collar without the tie, but alway [pencil ran off sheet and sheet changed.] always she wore the pin, yes.

(The time is up now to stop the sitting. Will you take an article and see if you can get the person next time to come?)

you can tell [?] [pause.]

(Write it again carefully please.)

you wish it. I will tell my son.

(I do wish *very* much for you to take the influence I shall give you and you can try to bring the person to me. Can you do this?) if you wish us very much.

(Can't read. Clearer.)

I will try. will you call my son friend. [J. H. H. called and came in.]

(Yes, father.)

I.. (Wait a moment.) [pencil fixed.] going now.

(Goodby until tomorrow.)

(Mrs. L. "I asked them to take this influence with them. Shall I give it to the hand?") [Mrs. L. placed a book of R. H.'s under Mrs. Smead's hand, after opening it.]

Mrs. L. reports that absolutely nothing in this sitting has any relevance. No persons are even recognizable. The boy referred to was thought at one time to offer a chance for something, but the allusion did not sustain any details that were necessary. All the incidents about the "elderly lady" and her dress is irrelevant.

---

October 26th, 1906.

10.47 a. m. Present Mr. M., Mrs. LeM. and J. H. H.

According to the agreement last Tuesday, Mrs. LeM. came into the room to be present as one of the lights. She sat in the rocking chair behind Mrs. Smead and soon went into a trance. As she went into the trance, or rather just before it, she complained of a pain in her breast, held her hands about her neck and said that she could not breathe. Soon she was wholly unconscious. Mrs. Smead showed no signs of suffering but went calmly, as usual, into the trance.

we are here. (Good.) yes, the lady says she [pause and trembling of hand.] was the one that [pause.] \* \* \* \* \* it troubles her to her. [pause.] (What....) She was the one that we told your friend was so very sick before she came here. it was suff... [erased.] she said like being poisoned. [pause.] that

made her suffer so hard. we cannot let her talk alone because it would make her suffer again and it does just to come near.

(Yes, I understand.)

we hoped that friend H. would help her but he said it was not best for her to try and so she said to tel [tell] her friend that much as he ha. . [read as 'he had.'] no, much as he hated, yes, to believe that she was living [pause.] yet it was so, yes, and that she would [pause.] still keep [read 'help.'] keep him anxious about her no longer. for now he knows what she has suffered and is still alive [not read.] alive. She will not worry him longer. [pause.]

(Let me fix the pencil.) [Pencil turned around.]

she said she had not left the room from which she came here only to stay near him because she wanted to make him kno. . . her, yes, and that so many times has she suffered over that. [pencil turned again.] now she will try to go from it. (Good.) as she knows he has heard about it. We are sorry James that we could not let her try herself.

(All right, father. I understand.)

but you know what the difficulties is [read 'difficulty is'] then suddenly 'difficulties are,' when the pencil wrote:] are and you see she has stayed in that earth condition until [read 'and it.'] no, until she would need go away for some time before she could talk (I understand.) without getting \* \* we have told her so.

(Wait till I fix the pencil.) [Pencil turned again.] you did not (I will change it.) [Pencil changed.]

he did not like to be [pause.] [Hand trembled much.] she did not like it because we told her to \* \* [possibly scrawls for 'wait.'] but we could not do otherwise.

(Yes, I understand.)

[pause.] will you tell the friend so. (Yes.) yes, we would gladly could we ['could we' read as 'continue.'] trying, but it would not do.

(Yes, have you anything else to say about that case?)

we would rather she tell [not read at time.] tell her own story.

(Yes, that's right.)

it is better.

(I understand.) yes. (Do you wish to talk about other things?)

not this time James. we use [not read at once.] use [old fashioned 's.'] so much force that we must not try another this time, you understand. (Yes, I do.) yes, I will leave you now. (All right.) Goodbye My son. (Goodbye, father.)

Mrs. Smead came out of the trance sooner than Mrs. LeM. As soon as the sitting was over I turned to look at

Mrs. LeM. and she was resting her head on her hand and her elbow on the bedside. In a few moments I raised her head and she sighed and gasped for breath. Presently she suddenly opened her eyes with a start and asked if any one was there. I made no special reply and in a moment she sank back into a half trance again and more sighs and heavy breathing occurred when she again awakened unable to use her tongue to speak. Her legs were so numb that it was difficult to walk for some time. In some respects her trance was ended in the manner of Mrs. Piper's. She did not utter any sentences but the physical signs, in particulars which I cannot describe, resembled Mrs. Piper's. Mrs. Smead has never shown any of these.

After Mrs. LeM. recovered consciousness she remarked to me that she wanted to speak to the gentleman. She had remembered some of the things which came into her mind during the trance or which had been admitted into it as she came out. I took her to the gentleman and she afterward told me what she narrated to him as her experience.

The reader will notice that the communications represent the communicator as suffering as if she had been poisoned and that this allusion only partly coincides with the impression after the sitting of the 23rd that she had been poisoned by the man himself. If the message had been the same it would have been referable to secondary personality so far as Mrs. Smead is concerned, and it may still be so in spite of its variation. But the fact that both had gotten a similar impression on the previous occasion when the man was present is against this supposition, and so is the difference between the two occasions in the message given at this sitting. It remains to verify the facts in the case.

The verdict of Mr. M. which I have quoted at the end of a previous sitting was passed after reading the present record, and so stands, no pertinence being discoverable by him in the communications. He was desirous of having further experiments, but there has been no later opportunities for these.

On the 27th Mrs. Smead reported as having occurred, after the sitting of the 26th, the following experiences.

"Friday afternoon, after the sitting with the gentleman where the lady with dark hair appeared, I felt several times as if I had a mustard plaster across my shoulder, and once this afternoon I felt it. It seemed to be about the size of a small letter sheet."

October 27th, 1906.

10.40 a. m. Present Mrs. L. and J. H. H.

[10.45 hand trembled and at 10.48 wrote.]

I shall try and get the lady for this friend as we promised her to do.

(Very good.)

She asked me to, so I shall go to try, wait.

(Mrs. L.. I asked....) [Long pause.]

[Mrs. L. placed Dr. Hodgson's MSS. book of verses under Mrs. Smead's wrist. Hand trembled more noticeably, for awhile and then moved upward on the paper and began writing.]

she [read at time as either 'the' or 'she.'] [pause.] she \* \* [erased] so we cannot talk like this.

(Mrs. L.: Who is the lady who seems to wish to speak to me?) [pause.] she hath influence but it is not strong enough for the light [light] this time. had it been taken from of her [read 'of her' doubtfully.] off person it would have been stronger.

(To what do you refer in taking it off her person?)

when she left the earth the book that she read does not hold personal memories of friends (Good.) like the smaller objects of her wearing apparel.

(Well it is another person that is wanted. Here is an article.)

[I here placed another article of Dr Hodgson's on the table near the hand—an article which I have used on various occasions with Mrs. Smead and others.]

I will go in search and try and bring the person.

(Good. Look at the article carefully.)

[I pointed at the article and thought of Dr. Hodgson. Hand quietted and a long pause of four minutes. Then it trembled for two minutes before it began to write.]

Think [read as 'then' with waiting for the rest. As hand was superposing I said: 'Wait a moment' and moved the hand and pencil down.] T... [I suddenly read 'think.' you J.... my son. [pause.]

(Do you wish me to leave the room?)

[pencil made a line across the page and wrote an undecipherable word resembling 'son.'] you think you can trifle with your father. [written very rapidly.]

(No I....)

no, I went to see which of the friends [pause.] and your friend's ['s' written on next sheet.] lady friend over

(Wait a moment.)

here said you did not think it was me. this young lady has very beautiful blue eyes and her features are what you call peculiar, imperfect. ['imperfect' not read, except 'in' for 'im.'] P E R F.... [suddenly read 'perfect.'] yes. h... [erased.] she has abundance of beautiful brown hair, yes. her face is one that \* \* [erased.] was never spoiled by the use of outside powders.

(Well....) there is also a tall [read 'tale.'] tall [read 'ball.'] no, T... (Tall.) Gentleman and he... his head is all light, yes.

(Father....) (Mrs. L.: This may be all right.) (Go on.) yes, he has a smooth face and a dark suit black, yes \* \* .

(Let me fix the pencil.) [pencil turned.]

coat is not made as I wore mine.

(Well, how is it made?)

it is longer and he has a high ('Light'?) no, standup collar, yes, and whe [erased.] weres [erased.] wears, yes, a ring with a big stone. it looks like red, yes. and he has a pair of white cuffs, like the collar and he has a stone in it that looks [superposed.]

(Last word again.)

looks like a diamond, yes.

(Mrs. L.: There is nothing here.) (J. H. H.: Let it go.) [Pencil changed.]

he has asked me to describe his [read 'this.'] his personal appearance [appearance.] to you and now he says it was his evening [read coming.] no, ev... [suddenly read 'evening.'] costume, yes.

(Good, does he know me personally.)

no, he knows your lady ['your' read 'you.'] fr...

(Wait a moment.) [hand superposing and was moved down.] the lady friend,

(Mrs. L.: Does he know me?)

yes, and her friend, yes, that is interested in your work. [Mrs. L. looked at her watch and pointed at it, signifying that the time was up.] we must go now.

(All right, the time is up.)

goodby.

(Goodbye, father.).

Mrs. L., after the sitting, said that there was absolutely nothing in it that was pertinent except the allusion to the

young girl with blue eyes and the tall man. She thought of her sister who so appeared early in the Piper sittings and her husband who was tall. But details do not fit at all. The sitting was an absolute failure in relation to her, and I do not know any pertinence whatever in any of the incidents.

J. H. H.

October 29th, 1906.

10.45 a. m. [Present Mrs. B., J. H. H. only a few minutes at the beginning.]

we R here [pause.]

(Let me move the book, please.) [Book or pad moved up a little.]

we, yes, wish to be set right, yes.

(About what?)

our own point, this pencil.

(All right. Shall I change the pencil?)

[I had begun with pencil used when Mrs. B.'s husband communicated. I changed to the one used by my father when in control and placed it between first finger and the thumb.]

yes, now I have a word to you, James alone.

(All right.) [I asked Mrs. B. to leave a moment. She left.] your lady friend of last week did not understand us. she hurt us so as she moved us around we could not do for her what we would. that is all now. you can leave us with your friend if you wish.

(Yes, I shall do so.) [I called Mrs. B.]

tell her not to hurt us. [I left as this was writing.]

(Who is here?)

you want your same friend.

(Yes, I do.)

he said has she seen me yet.

(No, not yet.)

I will tell him to try.

[Change of handwriting.] Yes, I am here Bess and...

(Are you Captain?)

I am. [pause.] you are all right this time. your soul is at rest more now.

(Yes, I am all right.)

yes, I do not like it so troubled as it was before I came to you here.

(I don't think I'll ever be so disturbed again.)



your friends will help you.yes you know that what your Friend C. H. you asked me to tell you... what you wanted to do. I would not if I were you.

(Why not?)

because I do not think you could be happy.

[A short passage omitted because it is too personal to publish.]

Charles Horton.

(Which do you mean? That is not correct.)

horton you get. his name, do you get it.

(Not quite, spell it.)

Horten. is it well. ['Horten' possibly attempt at correct name.] is she. [?]

[A considerable passage of private matter is here omitted. It contains one or two incidents of some evidential value, but are too personal to mention in detail.]

(What shall I do with your father's picture at home?)

Keep it, yes.

(Don't you want me to send it to Rachel?)

no, no, it was mine and now it is yours: not where you are there. keep it for me.

(Don't you want to send some message to the children?)

It is hard to do it when they are always so busy and don't have much time to think of me over here.

(Don't they think of you?)

yes, but not like you.are you doing much for the ones over there.that is what they tell me here. you....

(I do want to be useful.)

I what, I did not here [hear.] you always were my deari [e] and you can do very much by helping to show them over there where you are that we are here. you do not my dearest need be... need be afraid to let your light be used for the work. it would not hurt you. do you understand.

(Yes, I understand.)

it will be well and I will help you, yes. [pause.] I have [done] it since you came nearer to me, me, yes. this work will help your usefulness.

(You know that my desire is to be useful in life.)

yes, and you can bring comfort to those that are over here, yes, by helping with your life. [pause.] it is our choice [erased] choice, yes. I am glad to help with you Bessie and you need [erased.] need not be afraid to give up to it.

(Can't you come to me?)

I shall be glad to if it [erased.] the father, [sheet changed.]

Father so desires it. we will ask him, yes. you must let me tell you another time about that. I will help you as you so desire me for a guide. it is all right. you need, yes, not worry. I must go. the time goes so rapidly. what did you say.

(You will surely come to me?)

yes, I will. I shall live near to you my love. I shall come to you alone. you will not be frightened.

(No indeed I will not.)

then I will come as near as I can to you this night. will you seat [apparent attempt to erase.] set in a an [a' and 'an' erased,] an easy chair and do as your friend here is tonight. good, no I must lno.... I must leave you until I try to come alone tonight. goodbye my Bessie. be willing that we shall control you.

[Change of handwriting and control.]

Tell James we are agoing to leave now.

(Shall I call him?)

no, not time now. I was almost gone when you called to me. now what did you ask of me.

(Won't you be my friend?)

I am the friend of all Son James has for friends, but that is not just what you wish me to say. what is most or nearest to your heart, yes.

(Can't you help me?)

I do when I can be of service to the work. I am not this time.

Mrs. Smead was not told of the failures last week with Mrs. L. The allusion to the rough handling and failure is pertinent therefore.

It is true that Mrs. B. feels less worried or troubled than she was before she came here. Mrs. Smead knows nothing of her previous history and of course nothing of the state of mind which gives pertinence to the allusion here. The reference to "Charles Horton" is the same as to Charles H. in the second experiment, but the name is apparently completed here, tho not correctly.

The remainder explains itself. It is not evidential, but it has the right characteristics about it for being what it purports to be.

One of the most interesting incidents in Mrs. B.'s sittings is that connected with the statement coming from Mr. B. "I shall be glad of it if the father, Father so desires it." The reader will remark that it is imbedded in the conversation about her trying mediumistic work herself. She

has had many mediumistic experiences and has done automatic writing of the usual type. One who purports to communicate through her more or less as a control is Father Damien. Apparently it is he to whom Mr. B. alludes in the message. Mrs. B. did not recognize this until I called her attention to it. Mrs. B.'s own father is still living. Mrs. Smead knew nothing whatever about this control of Father Damien. I had always attributed his presence in Mrs. B.'s writing to secondary personality, as she had a very great admiration for him and his work. But apparently the allusion to him here would imply a more interesting explanation.

October 30th, 1906.

10.50 a. m. Present Mrs. H. and J. H. H.

[Hand began writing at 10.55.]

we [pencil showed it was going to run over top of paper.]

(Wait a moment.) (Mrs. H.: Don't touch her.) [Said in whisper.] [J. H. H. moved hand down.] are here. you can ['can' not read at time.]

(Little larger letters please.)

see that we are not hurt ['hurt' not read at time.] this time.

(Word before this.) hurt. (Good, I shall.)

yes, you understand me.

(Yes, I understand perfectly.)

then we will ask you to leave us. I shall let the gentleman try for her.

(Good, if I am needed you will call for me.)

yes, I will.

(I shall be outside.) [J. H. H. leaves the room.]

I came to you at the last time you came here and you did not recognize me. [J. H. H. called in to read. Sitter could not understand.]

(Well.) yes.

(I shall have to read.) no.

(For the lady.) not all.

(You can write and I can read it afterward. Is that it?)

you can go out of our light. [J. H. H. goes into the corner of the room.]

when you come before we could not let him try. you were too nervous. now I shall sti [erased.] sit back and he will work

alone. why did you think it impossible [J. H. H. called to turn sheet. Then returned to his position.] for mother and I to ever come back to you. we came as soon as we could and now my head does not trouble [me], yet you do not speak one word to us here. do you still care for us. it is so strange. it was always I that was quiet, but I never [J. H. H. called to turn sheet and remained.] could believe you wuld [would] not speak to me. Do you come to trouble me. my head is all right now. it is all right.

(Now what relation are you to this lady?)

I shall not stay if she does not care to speak to me

(Yes, she cares.) alone. (Yes, I hope you could give something to prove your identity.)  
she is mine.

(Good. Yes, she does not see you. We get the messages in writing and it will take little incidents in your two lives to show that you are present and when you are able you can give your name in full or in such form as she will recognize it.)

I cannot tell her one thing (Wait a moment.) [superposing.] she does not already know.

(Good, but you can tell something which the lady through whom you are communicating cannot know.)

[Hand went on writing while I spoke this statement.]

Is she not satisfied to know she is mine still.

(Yes, but that does not prove whom you are clearly.)

you know that I came here of head trouble and I will tell you that I worried \* \* until it made me sick, yes, and now I am [written 'an.'] trying to set right myself again. yes we [hand shook and 'we' erased.] I do not like to tell my troubles to strangers.

(That's right. Talk on some other subject.)

and she knows I never was much good at talking.

[Long pause during which Mrs. H. remarked: 'Won't that person tell his name?' J. H. H. replied: 'Yes, but that must take its own course.']

[Hand began shaking and in a moment to write but paused again for a few moments and wrote illegible scrawls.] \* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* will come next week [all this not read at time.]  
(Cannot read it.)

we will [read 'would.'] come ...will... will... next week, Hodgson.

(All right, Hodgson.)

you can help us, yes, goodbye ['by' read 'boy,' and this followed by attempt to erase, when I read it rightly.] Hodgson.

(All right. Goodbye. Come again.) [pause.]

[This interruption by Dr. Hodgson, assuming that it is he, shows a very marked change in the handwriting. It decidedly

resembles in general characteristics his writing in the Piper case. The writing now changes to the preceding, deliberate style, Dr. Hodgson's having been rapid and less clear.]

I told her to speak to me alone. [J. H. H. whispers to Mrs. H. to greet the communicator.]

(Mrs. H.: I am glad to see you.) (Yes, she will the next time.)

not now no.

(Not next time, but now?)

you see not [probably intended for *now*] how hard we speak to you [pause] now do you wear my rings always,

(J. H. H.: Say Yes or No.) (Mrs. H.: Yes.)

[Hand slightly trembles.] yes keep it do not ever take them from the place I put them.

It is a new way to talk (Yes, I understand.) and hard to bring back memories, yes, but I an [am] trying. [Hand trembles as it writes next few words.] let us never forget the time I put the first one there.

(No, she would not forget that.)

it was when we were happiest, [read first 'happy,' then 'happiest.'] yes. (Wait a moment.) [Hand ran off paper.]

I know that she cares because she took it and said, yes, she would love me always, yes. [excitement in hand.]

It is time for me to go. [pause.]

(Yes, the time is up.)

goodby James. When friend H. said, yes. (Yes I shall.) Father. (Yes, I shall.)

When Mrs. Smead came out of the trance she complained of a pain in her head which she said was not like a headache. It passed away in ten minutes. She said, however, that she saw a hand with a pencil by the side of her's all alone. Also that she saw a lady with dark hair parted in the middle and wavy on the sides and pushed over the ears in the old-fashioned way. Lady was stout. Also saw a man with pleasant face and hair a little gray, but not much so.

October 30th, 1906.

1.05 p. m.

I just asked my Secretary if she knew the woman who was here this morning and she at once asked me, "Which woman?" I replied, either one. Mrs. Le M. at once said that she did not know and remarked that she did not even

see one of them. The other, the lady's companion, came into the room to write a note while the sitting was going on, but her name was not given to Mrs. LeM. Mrs. LeM. remained in entire ignorance of the sitter, as I wish her to have another sitting. I admitted them to the house and Mrs. H. was heavily veiled. A few moments after saying that she did not know either one of them Mrs. LeM. suddenly said: "Wait a minute! Was Mrs. H. . . . . (giving full name) here this morning?" I simply asked her in reply, "What makes you think that?" She replied, "Now you tell me." I admitted it, and Mrs. LeM. remarked: "I just heard a voice telling me the name."

I am quite confident that Mrs. LeM. had not been able to know or suspect in any usual way the identity or name of the party who came for the sitting.

JAMES H. HYSLOP.

October 30th, 1906.

Mrs. Smead described the following vision as having occurred last Sunday morning just after breakfast.

She had gone upstairs to Mrs. Brain's room and was sitting in a rocking-chair between the two beds when she saw the head and shoulders of a lady near the foot of the bed on her left. The lady had on a cap whose front was flat and a band seemed to cross it. The sides were puffed up or ruffled. The top was quite high as if it rested on a knot of hair held up by combs. The face was thin and the cheek bones high.

Mrs. Brain recognized this as a description of her grandmother. Mrs. Brain describes the cap which she wore as follows. The grandmother wore a cap which was plain across the front and the sides fuller, resembling ear laps. The crown of the cap arose slightly above the head so that it could be seen. Mrs. Brain says that she does not know a lady to-day who wears one like it. The cap was of the style of forty years ago.

Mrs. Smead, after the vision, came down stairs and asked Mrs. Brain to describe her mother. Mrs. Brain wanted to know why and Mrs. Smead said she thought she, Mrs.

Smead, had seen her mother. Mrs. Brain always called her mother.

JAMES H. HYSLOP.

October 30th, 1906.

Mrs. Smead described the following experience last night. She was awake when it occurred. She seemed to see six persons in the room. One was a lady who looked like the lady she saw yesterday morning, just after the sitting. There were several men. One had on a cap which made him look like a priest. Another had a four-cornered hat such as children sometimes wear. Others had on hats like the Pope or a Bishop of the Roman Church. She started to get up to write it down, but found that she could move only her head. All the persons in the vision were dressed in white.

JAMES H. HYSLOP.

10.34 a. m. \*

October 31st, 1906.

[10.38 hand began to write. Present Mrs. Quentin. J. H. H. a few minutes.]

we are here, yes, the others will accompany the ligh [t] and for the presen [t] James I shall try their methods alon [e]. You u. d. what I mean.

(Yes.) [Mrs. Q. read the 'U. D.' mean.

(You mean for me to leave the room for the present and...)

[pause.] (You mean that you will conduct it alone.)

i mean I will try to tel [t] the friends while I try to keep the light usable [usable.] yes, now let us try.

(Good; I shall leave that to you.)

yes, leave. [J. H. H. left the room and did not return till the close.] yes, alone.

(Can you tell me who is here?)

T... wait awhile. [possibly what has been interpreted as 'T' may be the beginning of 'H,' as the beginning of 'H' in the next word resembles this.] Hattie as she said, you asked for H and the other one is not herer. [here.]

(Is H. here?)

it is her that would speak with you. she will need rest often. she says tell mamma we have a lovely time so many of us together.



(Are you all together?)

we are most of the time.

(Who is speaking?)

Robert Hyslop for ure [your] little girl.

(Is the little girl Alice?)

yes, and there is another too she says. She has only been here over two Sabbaths.

(Can she tell her name?)

Harriet. she is not strong enough yet mamma. we get stronger here in a little while to come back. you kn now [hand began superposing and had to be moved down.] mamma that this man has the same name as our Robie's name

(Is there a little boy there?)

name as I said like Robie mamma. do you know we come to you lots and put our arms around your neck and kiss you, yes, and you jump sometimes and think it is a noise.

(But I mean another little boy, not Robbie.)

he is not right here, but he is home with auntie. she took him home mamma [tendency to get the 'Mamma' with one 'm' as has always been the custom with Mrs. Smead.]

(Who took him home? Grandma?)

and Alice would not stay. she saw you go out mama and she came with you and I am glad I come because I rather be near you.

(Do you see your little sisters?)

I told you mama we had a nice time together and auntie and gramma take us to see so many pretty places, but I like to stay near you.

(You don't miss me there?)

we do mama. sometimes we cry because you don't come. then they take us away till we feel better mama.

(Do you learn lessons there?)

we are learning all the time and I am this time having my first lesson in talking to you mama this funny way, you see mama.

(Can you ask Grandma to speak to me?)

she is home mama with baby brother.

(Where is home?) [pause.] [Question repeated.] where w... [pause.] where there are lots of pretty (Wait a moment.) [pencil fixed.] trees m ['m' erased.] and hills that help to make it look pretty and then the home is there with you. if you was here it would be here. that is what Grandma tells us when we cry.

(You must not cry. I think of you always. Be a good boy and teach little brother.)

we play and grandma tell us lessons. Alice went back to tell her to come to you quick. mama did you think baby brother could play with that ball now.

(No, I did not think so.)  
 but he did once mamma and perhaps if he comes here with us  
 he will want to....  
 (Is Grandma there yet?)  
 no, mama.  
 (Tell me how much you see me.)  
 we see you most mama when it is dark where you are because  
 sometikes you come here with us them [possibly intended for  
 'then.'] but we can put our arms around you outside ma....  
 grandma didn't come, no, the man says we must go away pretty  
 soon.  
 (Send a message to your father before you go.)  
 ask papa to come and talk to all of us mama. tell papa we  
 can go with him easy now and I can have lots of good times here.  
 (I will.) yes, we love them all.  
 (Wait a minute.)  
 all of us do mamma love him and you to [too] to [tell] tell  
 him I saw baby's rattle ball, then he will know it was me,  
 (I don't remember any rubber ball.)  
 no, baby's ball.  
 (Do you mean doll?)  
 it made a noise.  
 (Yes, I know. It made music.)  
 yes. I must go mamma.  
 (Give my love to Grandma.)  
 yes and sisters and baby.  
 (Is that all?)  
 He has gone.  
 [J. H. H. overheard the indications of closing and came in.]  
 Tell James I shall go now.  
 (All right, father.)

I had just come down stairs from the sitting which Mrs. Q. had with Mrs. Smead and found Mrs. Smead in the library with my Secretary, Mrs. LeM. Mrs. LeM. remarked that soon after Mrs. Smead came into the room she, Mrs. LeM. felt a slap or touch of a hand on her shoulder and Mrs. Smead remarked to me that she saw a lady in white. Mrs. LeM., owing to her feelings and sensations which were that of something trying to influence her, asked Mrs. Smead to go away. Mrs. Smead went down stairs. In a few minutes Mrs. LeM. showed signs of control and asked me to call Mrs. Smead at once, which I did. When Mrs. Smead came upstairs Mrs. LeM. took a sheet of paper and asked Mrs. Smead

to hold her, Mrs. LeM.'s hand. Mrs. Smead placed her right hand on Mrs. LeM.'s right, which soon began to write. The following as far as it is decipherable was the result.

[scrawls.] Remember the energy [?] carried [?] out of this \* \* \* \* this morning . . . . be a useful \* \* when [?] [sheet changed.] now do you see how this is James. \* \* \* \* is and [?] \* \* Be careful of this \* \* for with it is \* \* \* \* \* tell her stop \* \* \* \* \* power controlled \* \* \* \* \* [pencil quickly thrown from hand, and writing ceased.]

Immediately after Mrs. LeM. began to recover clear consciousness, as she was not perfectly normal and complained apparently of something as was indicated by exclamations as if pained, she said she saw light all through her head flying about like forked lightning. As soon as she was clear she said that her impression of what they were trying to say was that I should be careful of this lady, the sitter who had just gone, as she would be useful in the work.

Mrs. Quentin makes the following notes with reference to this sitting. In a note to the first she says that she did not utter the whole name of the persons whose initials are given in the questions she asked of the communicator. This will explain the significance of the name Harriët.

"Mrs. Smead was in a trance when I came in and did not see me at any time. Notice the name of my mother Harriet is given at once correctly. It was always used in the form of Hattie for my mother and Harriet for my grandmother.

I have no little girl on the other side, but my brother has—a tiny baby. The Alice referred to—name mentioned by Mrs. Q. in previous sitting (p. 643)—represents my sister Alice who died at the age of six months years ago. You notice she is referred to by my children as "auntie," tho I had given no clue of her relation to me. Robie (Robbie) referred to is my grandfather's only son, my mother's brother who died, aged twelve, years ago.

The child speaking is evidently my oldest son who was still-born and had no name. He certainly was not in my thoughts, and I was perfectly amazed to be forced to admit

it was he, by his reference to his little brother who was younger and who lived to be seven months old.

The reference to the musical doll which turned on a stick and whose body was round like a ball and of various colors is too absolutely pertinent to be mistaken. The youngest baby loved this toy fondly and would stretch out his arms to it the moment he saw it, all through his illness.

When he says, "Yes and sisters and baby," he evidently means his two sisters and baby sister on this side, tho it puzzled me at first."

Mrs. Quentin adds with reference to the two sittings as wholes the following summary.

"My impression of the first sitting was very unfavorable and I went away much disappointed; but the second was so startlingly and unexpectedly pertinent that had I been the greatest sceptic I would have been forced to recognize some power outside anything obtained from my mind. I never dreamed of getting a communication from the nameless baby whom I never knew, but it *must* have been so, or there is no meaning in his reference to 'baby brother.'

You see how far the musical doll was from my thoughts when at first I did not know what was meant by 'rattle ball,' and asked, 'Do you mean rubber ball?'

The oldest little boy would have been ten years old last winter and the youngest eight years this July. He died seven years ago aged six months.

This last sitting made an impression never to be effaced."

---

November 1st, 1906.

10.30 a. m. Present Mrs. X., and J. H. H. a few minutes at outset.

I am here James.

(Good; glad to greet you.)

yes, will you wait

(Yes, I shall wait.)

[pause.] for m... us to get the friend.

(Yes I shall.)

[pause.] will she wish to talk when alone James.

(Mrs. X.: Never mind.) (No, not necessarily. If you can do it as well with my presence you can do so, but if you need me to leave I shall do so.)

[pause.] the friend would like to talk alone.

(All right. I shall leave.) [J. H. H. leaves the room.]

you came to see me.

(Yes, that is a right greeting.)

I am glad you did because It [new line begun] is so good of you to come.

(I am glad.)

and it is so nice that we can talk.

(I am happy to come.)

although it is just a little different, yet we can do it here.

(Yes, we can do it here.)

you know how much I loved you and now I do still only more but I would tell you all about it my dearest one. you know that we loved each other very much and did not know how much we were to each other until I had to come over here. when I came away I could see you so clearly my dear and I wanted you to know I was all right.

(That is true.)

I did not want you to weep but I was free from my pain.

(I was glad to have you free.)

and I wanted you to be happy, not said [Probably intended for *sad*].

(Yes, I understand. But it was hard.)

yes I know my dearest one I could not help weeping for you were so lonely and I could not help you as I used to when we were together. yes, not like w... when I was I did put my arms around you my dear, but it was so different than when you would look up and smile when I did it before, you know what I mean mean mean.

(But you helped me.)

but it was so hard to have that dreadful pain.

(Yes, it was terrible.)

you know I could not have suffered it had you not been so good to me.

(How do you mean? But you were very good to me.)

I should now have to be very much ashamed if I had not my dear been good to you. you, I know were patient with me when I had that dreadful pain. It was so hard sometimes.

(Anyone would have been patient with you.)

[pause.] we can have a talk about something else. It makes me suffer so all over again.

(Yes, let us talk of something else.)

It pleases me to see you carry those flowers for me. yes, it

looks more cheerful. we can know so many things here about which you do that I did not reli... [erased.] realize when I was there. It is so nice to have you where I can talk to you yes. I must rest awhile. wait.

(Yes, I will wait.) [pause.]

How did you find me here.

(Did you not send me word?)

no, how did you find me here. yes, but I wanted you to come and how did you know it.

(Did you not send me word?)

yes [pause.] then [?] you did get it. I did not know but perhaps you did n't. It is quite a while since, yes. (How did you send me word?) through your friend, yes.

(Which friend?)

you know the one. I do not nee[d] tell it.

(That's right.)

we can send the word to you because you have some light yourself.

(How have I shown it?)

because you know sometimes I have come to you. you could see me.

(You mean I could feel you.)

no, see me. I can make you know it is me.

(that is true.)

yes and it is so nice to be able to keep near each other.

(It helps me a great deal.)

it is what takes so much of the awful sting away, yes, and helps us here so much when our friends, all of those we love, can know we are near them, yes.

(Tell me something of yourself.)

If I do think [think] about it, it brings back that dreadful pain.

(Can't you talk about happy days?)

yes, I will rest and try again.

(Yes, rest.) [Pause.] [pipe laid on table.]

you know we do not use them here. yes.

and I would like to again with you, yes.

(No, I did not think you did, but you enjoyed it here.)

I had lots of comfort smoking, yes.

(Yes, that is right.)

and that is why you saved them because they were mine.

(You remember those happy days?)

no one else even had them but myself and so you keep them for me, yes.

(But we will be together again?)

when we were together, yes, I wish we could again sit and talk while I could smoke, yes. we will but It is so \* \* [hard?] to

see them and then and you together now, yes will yo[u] look up so that I can see you full.

(Yes I will.)

I want to kiss you, yes, like I did. we will alway [s] remember it, and I will squeeze you untill [until] you so [probably intended for 'say.'] [circles then drawn.] h... [?] then until you say O yes.

(Yes, sweetheart.)

we will allways [always] be so happy, even now because I can come near you. It is so goo [d] to remember the times we we.... (Wait a moment. The pencil is wrong.) [pencil fixed.]

(Tell me some little fact.)

I will have to go the friend says very soon.

(Will you come again tomorrow?)

will I, oh yess [yes] I will come allways [always] near you

(Try to tell me some little fact.)

about my pipes. I will try to. I it [scrawl.] if it does not hurt me.

(I understand.)

yes, goodby

[J. H. H. then came into the room and the hand seemed to have ceased the writing. In a moment it began again in large letters.]

we are going. (Goodbye.) y...

After she came out of the trance Mrs. Smead said she saw a gentleman with a dark mustache and a broad forehead and the face was a little thin on the sides.

Mr. X. died of paresis and apparently there was no pain associated with his death. It is apparently true that Mrs. X. has "some light" as she has tried automatic writing with some success. Mrs. Smead knew nothing of the lady. Mrs. X. was brought in after Mrs. Smead had started into the trance and had her head and face buried in a pillow. She could not even see that it was a lady present. Mrs. X. left the room at the end of the sitting before Mrs. Smead came out of the trance and was not seen by her at all. The allusion to smoking and to the pipes might be regarded as evidence of the supernormal if we did not have to assume the possibility of subliminal perception by smell of the one that had been put on the table.



November 2nd, 1906.

Inquiry of Mrs. X. to-day reveals that her husband did take a great deal of comfort out of his smoking and it was very characteristic of him to sit before the fire and talk while having his smokes.

I ascertain also from her that he suffered dreadful pain during his illness. My previous note indicates that I thought there was none of this in paresis, but it seems that the doctors told Mrs. X. during the illness that his suffering was not so great as it appeared and then admitted afterward that it was, and that they were trying to relieve her of sympathetic suffering.

The most important incident is the allusion to carrying flowers. This Mrs. X. does constantly in memory of her husband. The allusion also to smiling was pertinent, in fact almost evidential, as it describes exactly what took place under the conditions described.

November 2nd, 1906.

10.45 a. m. Present Mrs. X. and J. H. H.

[Hand longer than usual before writing. 10.51 began.]

[Line drawn a short distance and then a pause, for 3 minutes.] [scrawl.] h... [pause, 4 minutes.] [scrawls.] here [?] [scrawls.] you [scrawls.] you \* \* \* \*

(I can't read it.) [I held my hand near Mrs. Smead's.] we are trying here [her] yes.

[Instead of coming back to its place the hand at once began to write in inverted mirror writing from right to left and wrote thus to the left hand side of page and then went from left to right in normal writing. It continued thus several times, as notes will indicate.]

not this time friend. we would [inverted mirror writing.] wait. we told you through the other [normal writing.] light [inverted mirror writing.]

(Well, I did not get that message.)

you did, for we gave it [inverted mirror writing.]

(Well, that was for another lady to be here next week.)

no, no, you did not understand [inverted mirror writing.] us. we that are here working told you two days since [normal writing.] that we did not wish the li... [inverted mirror writing.] ght this time. [normal writing.]

(Good. We shall give it up, but I did not understand it so.)

wait James. I will tell the other friends that help me. (Good.) the one that helps most does not wish it.

(Yes, I understand.)

it is he that you have doubted much. [pause.] yes.

(Who is it that I have doubted?)

C yes C l a r k e, you know. H yes, we cannot stay [normal writing.] [pause] when b C l l you he [the] secon... [not read at time.] [inverted mirror writing.]

(When shall we meet again?)

day after the Sabbath [inverted mirror writing.]

(I shall do so.) [read and understood as referring to first day after the Sabbath.]

second day after [inverted mirror writing.]

(All right. I shall do so. Shall it be for this lady?)

if she desires it so. [Inverted mirror writing.]

(Yes, she will come.)

[pause.] [Pencil ran off sheet and was replaced three times and immediately pushed off again. I then placed it on the other side of the sheet and there was a pause. In this interval I explained to the sitter why the sitting was postponed, giving a specific physical reason known to me. Immediately the following was written.] no. [pause.]

(We had better cease.) [No reply.]

After Mrs. Smead came out of the trance she said she saw numbers all over the field of vision, and especially the number 73. Immediately after this Mrs. Smead went and lay down, feeling only stiff, and had a nap of about half an hour. When she awakened she reported to me that she had seen the cross, two blue lights, and my father.

---

November 6th, 1906.

10.30 a. m. Present Mrs. X. and for a short time J. H. H.

[It was my intention that Mrs. H., who had the sitting of October 30th (p. 656), but she refused to come, being dissatisfied with the results of the first one. It is apparent that the control thought she was to be present, not having been apprised of the refusal. The same communicator purports to be present, but on being told the situation, leaves the field to friends of the new sitter.]

[Line drawn across the page and pencil ran off sheet. Hand gently moved back to left side of sheet.]

yes, all right over Ther [e] u. d. Hyslop.

(Yes, I think I understand. Things start off well this morning.)

[pause.] you do not understand me.

(All right. Please explain.)

it is all right over there, yes.

(Over here where I am?)

no [wavy line drawn] across [wavy line again] yes. [wavy line again.]

(Yes, good, I understand.)

yes.

(Across the billowy wave. When did she arrive?)

[pause.] we cannot [cannot] meet yet.

(I understand.)

we will soon tho [this word in previous habits was spelled 'though.']. [Inquiry of Mr. Piddington shows that Mrs. Piper arrived in Liverpool Wednesday, November 7th.]

we would ask you who the lady wishes her husband, yes. does she desire to talk with him.

(You mean the one who was spoken of last week?) yes. (Well she....)

you ask me James to bring him and now he wants to know if you wish him to try.

(Let me explain. I tried.....)

you do not need to.

(Good. I understand. If the gentleman wants to communicate with me he may do so and I shall write to her about it.)

[pause.] he will not but says he will go to her himself. (Good.) yes, does not want to talk with you.

(Very good. I shall try to get her again.)

There is another friend wearing a hat, James, says it is a D E R B Y and has a—perhap[s] the lad[y] would rather talk to him privately, James. ask her if that is her wish. [I asked Mrs. X. if she wanted to talk alone and she said she would.]

(Yes, she...) then I will leave him here.

(Shall I leave the room?)

if it is her wish to talk alone.

(Yes, I shall leave and hope to have a few words before you go at the close, so goodbye for the present.)

I will talk with you on the morrow.

(That will do.) [J. H. H. left the room.]

[change of handwriting.] I have [scrawly] come here to talk with you, yes. (Greetings.) yes, you know I came. all right [pause.] and we can, yes.

do you remember my black hat. (Yes.) I used to wear some times on [erased.] almost on the back of my head.

(And I didn't like it.)

yes, I used to do it to plague you, dear, yes.

(Yes, I remember.)

I sometimes would sit with \* \* [erased.] one foot on the other and lean back in my chair, yes.

(Yes, I remember.)

with my hat that way. can you see me now.

(No, I can't.)

your mind can, yes.

(Yes, my mind can.)

and I used to like to smoke.

(Yes you did.)

I told you I would come ['come' not read.]

(I don't make out that word.)

did I not come, yes, and I remember you \* \* [apparently scrawl for 'would.'] and [erased.] I remember I would tell you I loved you and that would help you [to] be my own sweet-heart and (yes.) we would be \* \* then. I guess I liked to tease [not read at time.] you, tease you. (Easily.) I wonder if I can. you can wait. I will just rest.

(That's right. Rest a little while.)

[pause.] did you bring my pipe.

(Yes, I did. Here it is.) [pipe placed on the table.]

yes I liked one y... [you ?] no, that pipe, yes.

(Is it your favorite pipe?) that was what I meant.

(Is your brother with you?)

he is not here this time dear, but I told him I was coming to talk to you and he laughed at my *I dea*.

(He did not understand.)

yes, no he finds much to interest him, interest him, so he does not want to come back near the earth.

(I understand. Does it hurt to come back?)

it does unless there are others to help that have learned the way, yes.

(Did you ever use my hand?)

I have tried to but we are uncertain as to our result, so you see we like to meet our friends at other places [places] yes, to tell them about our coming to them. I... you have my purse, yes. [pocketbook was lying on the table. had not been seen by Mrs. Smead in her normal state.] (Yes.) and you keep it yourself. (Yes.) yes, I has [probably intended for 'it has.'] what I needed of it [pause.] yes, you found is all right that you have there, yes, you did not find much in it did you dearest.

(You know I always spent it all.)

you had the right to it, yes.

(Slowly, dear, slowly.)

i[t] was yours, yours.

(Yes, I understand.)

you did not get what I had for smoking no, no.

(Do you want it? I have it.)

you keep it. it is yours now [pause.] I was only remembering [pause.]

(I understand, but would you like me to bring it here?)

and will you come again.

(That will depend on their letting me.)

It is so good to have you near me. I can feel you so plainly.

(I don't get that word.)

here no plainly. (Plainly, Oh yes.) plainly here. the vail is not dense like it is at other places, yes.

(I understand.)

(Can you write your name?)

J [or I] [sheet changed.] I can with you, yes.

(I understand.)

[Mrs. X. has done considerable automatic writing and has frequently received the name of her deceased husband in that manner. I have the record of this on file. His name was John. J. H. H.]

bit [evidently intended for 'but it.'] is better to have my things spoken of here so you know me by them. (Yes.) no one else can use them and if my name was used there are others to [too] [erased.] that have the same, yes.

(You are right.)

and you could not tell it was me.

(But I know it is.)

as well my \* \* [pipe?] no other has had na [?] my \* \* but you. (That is correct.) [pause.]

(What of your father?) I rest again. (Rest again.) we try to have meetings with you, you. we get some light through do we, yes, through to you.

(You mean you get some light through me.)

I mean do you get our words to you at home, yes.

(Sometimes I do.)

I come often and I try to [sheet changed.] you make you know, yes.

(I try every night.)

and I have been near you so much, yes, my friends there [not clear.] here think I am not succeeding.

(I don't get the last word.)

succeeding.

(They are mistaken.)

I have tried and I have sent my messages to friends there and

I have thought you got them. If you knew how hard it is you would want to help us.

(I try. What must I do?)

listen for me to speak, yes, yes, and you can hear me, yes. .

(How will you speak? Through my hand?)

I do, when you speak to me I have to talk with it, but I have to use your mind sometimes.

(I understand. Sometimes I think you use my mind and not my hand.)

yes, but I use both. it is very interesting to see the friends believing that once did not, yes.

(Tell me, do you see William?)

William yours y... [?] she my wief [wife] wants you. shall I, yes.

(That message is not clear.)

I only spoke to him. I said you wanted to ..... [sheet changed.] but he will not try. he his [is] smiling as usual. he says it is a joke. [pause.] his eyes flash and his face is all smiles, yes. he says it is a joke, yes.

(What is a joke?)

My trying to persuade him to talk to you. isn't it like him, (Like whom?) my brother. he will not.

(Is your father there?)

he is smiling... no alone... what did you say dearest, yes.

(Is your father there?)

no, not here, only [only.]

(Does he believe in this?) he helps me at home [pause.] that is he helps by [not clear] by thinking, yes, you know know I must [not read at time.] must go. the friend here say[s] it is time. we do not count time like you do and it soon passes when we come back, yes, goodbye my dear.

(I understand. It passes quickly with me when with you. Goodbye.)

I will come to you again.

(I hope so soon.)

and now keep my change. [pause.] goodbye, yes, keep it.

[Change of control.]

Tell James my son I would speak with him. [Mrs. X. came to door and J. H. H. came in.]

yes, I know it was whom (Yes.) you wanted James. yes, you know what I mean. (Yes.) I am going.

(Goodbye.)

goodby. [pencil then moved to edge of sheet and ran off. I watched it a moment and it showed signs of wanting to write. I placed the hand on a new sheet of paper, and the following in

inverted mirror writing took place.] take it away ['take' read 'ask.'] no take away.

[I was at the point of asking if he meant the pencil when Mrs. X. bethought herself of the pipe and mentioned this. I at once removed the pipe and handed it to Mrs. X. No further indications of writing occurred and Mrs. Smead soon came out of the trance.]

As soon as she recovered consciousness she said she saw a man with light brown hair, blue eyes, and all smiles over something. He wore a stand-up collar. She also said that she saw the cross [symbol of Imperator]. Also the letter "I" on the left side and "S" on the right. Under was a monogram in which the most prominent letter was "P." The letters "I" and "S" are two of the three, "I S D" which are used by Imperator in the Piper sittings as descriptive of his character. I can give no possible interpretation of "P" unless it be for "Prudens" who is one of the trance personalities in the Piper case.

---

[NOTES BY MRS. X.]

While seated at my desk very shortly after Mr. Mc—— died I had a momentary feeling and conviction that all was well. This re-occurred to me when the statement was made: "and I wanted you to know I was all right."

---

His suffering during the last weeks was so terrible and so hopeless that I was glad to have death free him.

---

The reference to the flowers applies, I think, to his grave. I am in the habit of carrying quantities of the garden flowers which I have strewn for tangle of growth about the grave and have many times questioned whether the more conventional treatment would seem to him more dignified. Miss G——, a psychic, once made a reference to roses at a time when I had them much in the rose garden and had carried many roses to the grave.

---

Ten or eleven months ago in writing automatically I repeatedly put the question whether, if I ever had a sitting



with Mrs. Piper, he would come. I occasionally have a feeling of presence. My reply, "You mean I could feel you" to the statement, "You could see me," brought to my mind an incident of Saturday evening, October 27th, 1906, when walking into my brother's in Boston. I had for a few moments, perhaps only seconds, a sensation of presence. A fleeting physical buoyancy of spirit accompanied this connection of presence.

---

The pipe was unwrapped behind Mrs. Smead and it had not touched the table when the hand began to write, "You know we do not use them here." Mr. Mc. was devoted to his pipe. Every evening after dinner when the coffee was brought in he would have a cigarette or a cigar. I often smoked a cigarette with him, but he almost invariably ended the evening with his pipe.

The request, "Will you look up so that I can see you full," is characteristic; for the eyes gave him the delight they give all lovers.

---

In the first sitting more than in the second the answers to my questions seemed to come almost before they were given verbal form. It may have been mere nervousness, but in my writing an answer of some sort is given to a mental question before the formal completion is worded.

---

On November 6th Mrs. X. wrote me the following explanatory notes which I append as throwing light on the sittings.

"When Mr. X. wore his Derby (black) he would frequently put it on his head rakishly to tease me. I have an aversion to seeing a man's hat tilted. My brother teases me in the same way. Mr. X., when ready to go out, would sometimes sit down with the Derby on and I would insist on his taking it off. I always said that it was unbecoming. He was a tease and delighted in a joke.

He had numerous pipes but the one in question was his

favorite. Tho I cannot be positive I doubt that he ever loaned it. There were two others which he liked and which he used when the one in question could not be found.

When I asked the question, "Is your brother with you?" I referred to his youngest brother Patrick, who died six months after Mr. X. and whom I never saw.

The question, "Did you use my hand?" refers to automatic writing which began with me suddenly in August, 1905, and ended abruptly in October, 1905. During that period the hand wrote with considerable freedom almost every day.

Mr. X. speculated in 1903 and lost. He always insisted that there should be no monetary questions between us and the bank account was joint. I am naturally extravagant.

"You did not get what I had for smoking," refers, I think, to the pouch. On the third of October, 1905, I saw Dr. Hyslop and he told me that he was going to Boston and would probably have sittings with Mrs. Piper and that he would take anything belonging to Mr. X. which I might decide upon. On October 4th, 1905, my hand wrote: "to send the piper but not the p." The word *pouch* came to me at once, but the movement of the hand was so weak that "p" is the only letter visible. I asked the question, "Why not the pouch?" and the answer was, "Because it is too strong, yes, it would make too strong a smell."

My question, "Do you see William?" referred to a living brother who is ill. The question was badly put. Mr. X. always spoke of this brother as Willie, Bill, or the Major. I do not think I ever heard him use the name William. The name evidently carried no meaning and I am supposed to be again speaking of Patrick. I do not know how much of a joker Patrick was, but I rather think he had a keen Scotch sense of humor. I shall inquire of his living brothers.

Inquiry in regard to the description of Patrick and Mr. X. shows the following result, in a letter from the brother of the communicator.

"As to the description is was not like Pat. as I saw him. His hair was quite dark, but they told me it was coming out badly at Bath and the tonic they put on it changed the color.

It was wavy. His eyes had atropine in them, which made them look much darker."

Mrs. X. adds with reference to her husband's hair. "My husband's hair in health was the color of pure gold. It grew darker before he died. The 'light brown hair' is interesting, as I have never thought of Mr. X. as having anything but very blond hair."

In the letter sending me some additional notes, and dated November 12th, Mrs. X. says: "My own hand has been writing again. 'Last night I was told I must be patient, for the message will not always be right.'" This apparently refers to statements made to the communicator on "the other side" assuming a knowledge of the normal mental states of Mrs. X. regarding the errors in the communications.

November 7th, 1906.

10.30 a. m. Present Mrs. P., Mrs. B. and J. H. H., the latter for a short time.

Hyslop we would talk to you.

(Yes, alone?)

not m... [pause.] uch [scrawl] easier... no will be easier,

(Alone?) yes. (Good.) [Mrs. P. and Mrs. B. left the room.]

you can arrange it Hodgson's way

(All right. Wait a moment.)

[pencil then put between first and second fingers, having at first been placed between finger and thumb.]

yes we would tell you, yes, that we are over all right, yes and (Good, glad to know it.)

ask you how long it will be that you \* \* [read 'said' at time.] [hand paused and then began printing.] W I L L w a n t our services here.

(Until the third day after the next Sabbath.)

we will come not all together by ['by' erased.] but one with R. H. at at [a] time, not the day before the Sabbath. our friends do not like you to work expecting [read 'especially.'] no. [suddenly read 'expecting.'] yes, him to work then. [pause.]

(Shall I have meetings as late as Friday or the fifth day after the Sabbath, after the last Sabbath?)

we will try for you, but our friends will not come then. we

must try the work alone. ['try' read as 'stay,' the 'st' of 'must' being joined with it.] no T R Y work, yes.

(Well if you think it best....)

they you know do not wish to work on the day you mentioned, but we can, I and father Hyslop together will try for you, yes.

(Shall I myself take the meeting on Friday?)

It would please us best. we are to help your work from now [not read at time.] now on, yes. (Thanks.) It will be difficult for awhile but practice patience as we do here and it will come out right. goodbye H. [scrawl.]

[Mrs. P. and Mrs. B. admitted again to the room.]

(I shall leave you alone.)

yes, yes, now. [J. H. H. left room.]

That lady with the brown hat he [pencil ran off paper.] hat here says she does not want to come quite so near to talk.

(Who is speaking?)

yes, R. Hyslop, yes. the lady is her friend, yes.

(Won't you try to bring some of her friends?)

the lady is her friend.

(Who is speaking?)

I thought she said M a r y but I might have been mistaken. it....

(Yes, Mary is right. How long has she been gone?)

we cannot remember. she has much light about her, so would say considerable time [pause.] and we [pause.] will ask if she has brought some... no... brought something to her, yes.

(No, did you want her to bring something?)

why did she not bring the [pause.] wait... and she says there was a little heart that she could have had she brought it.

(Do you want her to bring it here?) yes w... when she asks for it. Mother did have it [sheet changed.] when I came here.

(Is that her own mother speaking?)

no, my own mother. she wore it much.

(Please go and send some one to fetch my friend's mother here. She is so anxious to speak to her.)

yes, we will ask for her. [pause.] Friend she will come soon, wait. [pause.]

(Did you find her?)

She was reading near the table. she is coming now. [pause.]

I wonder what brought you here.

(Now is it this friend's mother?)

it is. is it possible now. how shall I talk to you child.

(Am I doing right about Will, mother?)

I knew you came for that. I would do it, child [scrawl.] for him. you know it is hard to yield your will, yes, but it is best. you must sacrifice yourself and you can never be sorry, no child, do not worry. I will talk to him myself and help him.

(Yes, he is too far away. He can't come.)

he will come. right, yes.

(Could I have done any more than I have done?)

we do it, yes, and tell him I am trying to help him, yes. Will you bring him to me, yes. [pause.] I will tell him to come to you, yes., I would bring him here to tell him. you must help him. be kind an [d] lovig [loving] patient [patience] will help him. give him coffee and lots of it.

(I did gorge him with it.)

it will help his bad habit and you keep him with you. go out with him and he will feel your love for him more. I will be able to help him more if he is with you, with you.

(Is my father with you?)

we were reading in the room, no ['no' erased.] at table, yes. we had the books and paper.

(Are you there all the time?)

yes, no, at this place.

(Is my husband with you?)

no, he says [he] stays near you. we are not at the same home. we have our own little one and he is near you.

(Is my child here?)

he is with her much of the time. we canot [cannot] use this now. first fix fix it.

[pencil turned in fingers.] no fix it R. Hyslop's way my way, no f... put it my way, the pencil.

[pencil then placed between first finger and thumb.] yes and I would say the little one is near her now, yes. it is a pretty little child and there is also a gentleman with a h... [erased.] silk hat,

(Is that the husband?)

yes, he looks near the child, yes, and I would say it was the baby's father, yes.

(Can't you talk to them and ask them to come and speak to this lady?)

they are not near so that I can talk for them and I would have [pause and sheet changed.] not this time. she is concerned much for the boy and will talk for to him. It is better for him near the lady and we shall ask this lady to come again, yes, we .... can she bring her husband's box with his small articles with her, yes.

(You wish her to bring her box and little belongings with her?)

yes, will try. goodby. [J. H. H. came in.]

After she came out of the trance Mrs. Smead said she saw a little child about two years of age and the letters B and W, the letter W was first and B afterward.

In the afternoon Mrs. Smead called me up stairs and said

she was bothered with a woman who had her hair brushed back and reading at a table. Whenever she shut her eyes Mrs. Smead said she could see her.

This last incident, and perhaps both, represent subliminal emergencies of impressions received during the trance. Compare sitting.

Inquiry of Mrs. P. in regard to the incidents of this sitting gives the following reply.

"The reference to the lady in brown hat suggests nothing whatever to me. Mary was a cousin's wife who died during October, 1905. I do not at all understand what she could have meant in referring to a little heart. I was only slightly acquainted with her mother. She never called me 'child.' I asked my mother if I could do anything for my brother Will. The answer was to give him coffee, as I had done that many times. I did not think that amounted to much. I do not understand the reference to a man with a silk hat. I did lose a child five months old. The letter B means nothing to me. It probably means the brother I have just referred to. The Dr. Friend (mentioned in Mrs. Z.'s sitting, p. 682), must have meant the doctor to whom I was engaged at the time of his death."

[LATER NOTE.]

When I first read the record I did not discover that there was an apparent reference to the sitter's grandmother. Hence the above note was written by the sitter without this reference being in her mind. She, as I, thought she was communicating with her mother. As soon as I discovered that there was a possible reference to the grandmother I wrote for further information and received the following facts.

The grandmother died in 1864 or 1865, and may have been in the habit of addressing the sitter as child.

In response to a direct question whether her husband wore a silk hat at any time in his life the reply is that Dr. R——, the "Dr. Friend," wore a silk hat evenings and at church. The record shows that it was apparently this friend

to whom the silk hat was referred. This was not recalled as a feature of identity, and the reader will remark that the second note contradicts the first one.

In reply to the inquiry whether the "little heart" had any reference to the grandmother I received the following:

"I am positive 'the little heart' referred to had nothing to do with her. When I was a child not more than five or seven years old, a young man, a cousin, visited Niagara and brought home two small bead pin-cushions made by Indians. He gave me one in the shape of a star and my sister a heart shaped one. I showed such a decided preference for the heart that my sister gave it to me for many years. This was laughed about in the family.

"The cousin subsequently married the 'Mary' referred to in the record, who passed away about two years ago."

As the incident of the "little heart" is associated in the record with this "Mary," and is a good one in evidence of identity, it is interesting to see how it was recalled at the later date.

---

November 8th, 1906.

10.30 a. m. Present Mrs. Z. and J. H. H., the latter only a short time with an interruption of only a few moments by his entrance in response to a request.

The present sittings were arranged for Mrs. P., the lady who had the previous sitting. She was unable to come and a friend came in her place. This fact will explain the allusions at the beginning of the sitting. I must remark, however, that Mrs. Smead met Mrs. Z. last Sunday at dinner in my house and Mrs. Smead thus knew her name. It is quite possible that Mrs. Z.'s friend, who was with her at this dinner (not the friend who had the sitting yesterday), may have mentioned her Christian name as it came out in the sitting. We have at least to assume that she did. But this is absolutely all that Mrs. Smead could have known in so far as the record of the sitting is concerned, a circumstance which is especially true in that I myself, tho knowing Mrs. Z. quite



well for eighteen months, never knew anything about the incidents mentioned at the sitting. They were a distinct surprise to me.

But, having in mind this acquaintance made last Sunday and knowing that Mrs. Smead did not know who was coming for the sitting, I kept Mrs. Z. out of sight until Mrs. Smead had gotten into the trance. Hence Mrs. Z. did not enter the seance room until Mrs. Smead's trance was on and her head and face buried in a pillow which would not permit her seeing the lady if she had been perfectly conscious. Mrs. Z. left the room also before Mrs. Smead came out of the trance. Consequently, at no time did Mrs. Smead know, in her normal state, who was in the room. So far as the supernatural is concerned the conditions were about as good as if Mrs. Z. had never been met at all.

H. we [?] [scrawly line drawn.] we come here yes.

(Good.) [pause.] (The lady here yesterday...) yes we... (could not come today and sent another in her place.)

we would have helped the Dr. Friend for her as we said. did she send the box.

(No, but allowed a friend to come in her place.) [pause.] (I...)

but we told him and I alway[s] liked to keep a promise, James.

(Yes, father. I did not know that the lady could not come. If I can arrange for another meeting later I shall do so.)

no use now. (All right.) I have told him. (Good.) [pause.] So we will try for you now. you can leave me now. I am sorry. [J. H. H. left room.]

we would ask the [thee] to first te... [started to write where it would superpose, and hand moved down.] tell the friend tha... to tell the friend that her mother is much alarm [ed] concerning the boy, yes.

(What boy?)

She will know. the one in trouble, yes, and now I will seek thy friend for thee S E E K [apparently first 'seek' not read.] I will seek thy friend for thee. wait.

(What friend?)

The one dearest to thee.

(My father do you mean?)

wait until friend Hyslop returns with thy friend. [J. H. H. called and came in, when the hand seemed to indicate that the previous request had been misunderstood and hence wrote.] no.

[pause.] H is here [handwriting different from the previous.] leave us [former handwriting resumed.] (All right.) [J. H. H. leaves again.] [Photo of father and letter placed on table.]

the friend will try to speak alone, but we may need to do it for them. he says C is all right and does not have any trouble now with his throat. can you him C. you know we are together and we come to your friend, but she does not like to let us talk to you, why don't she.

we would ask the [thee] to put it where we can see it C. you know there is a friend here that has a letter H. like that. what is it. arris. you know him, he says. Daughter will rember [remember] my sitting for that picture. they said it was a life size one. you rember [remember] how it was with that black coat and my collar was turned over, not the Standing up kind. you know my picture then did not yo[u] daughter. it was that large one and my face was nearly over to the side. [pause.]

you know I like to tell you that I am here and I can remember the way it looked up there. I can see is [it] in that room with the others. it is looking from the left Cassie to the right. do you remember about it, yes you.... [pause.] I am....[pause.] Is... he must rest. If you [pause.] perhaps he can tell you about his home with the Trees that shaded the front, you remember where he st....co ['co' erased.] when [he] stayed at... his... the capitol. you remember the large house looks like a wide street. he says, yes, it was and a large house with windows that are out in front, bay ones, lots of steps to the front door. yes and he lived there when he was in the city, the Capitol City, yes. good you think this [is] me.

(Am I your daughter?)

yes, she is my daughter, my daughter Cassie [pause.] P. He is here whom yo... [began superposing and hand moved down.] you once knew and the friend said wait. it was at that city where his picture is. we want friend Hyslop to come [last sentence shows slight change of handwriting.] [pause and change of sheet.] [Next begins with previous handwriting.]

we would tell you that the friend goes to the place called co ngress, no [wavy writing and slight scrawls.] where they gather to talk much of it does not a.... [pencil moved to left hand side of paper.] appear [superposed on 'much' and reading not certain.] Some of the n... [hand moved down.] new ways he says they should get. [scrawl and dim writing.] it troubles him to think, to remember long. so wait. [pause.]

he used to, he says, enjoy being in the Room with the other representatives [written 'representtives.'] of his \* \* \* \* he would like to have you tell him who [written 'whom' or 'hom,' as if a mistake for 'whom.'] has his place.

(Write that again.)

place who has it \* \* [on ?] the \* \* no senator in my place now [?] [pause.] he [pause.] can you tell me. I want to know. [pause.] now I would ask you to tell me. [pause.] you do not hear me, do you.

(Yes, I hear.)

then why don't you answer me who is in my place now as the senator \* \* [scrawl with letter 'd' ending it.]

(Josiah Wood.)

I guess I did not know him.

(Yes, you knew Josiah Wood.)

we did not meet there together.

[J. H. H. came in as the time was up and past.] we will wait a little. no, I must find about him. I don't remember him. now I will see him and [written 'an d.'] I will know then if I remember him. I will come and ask C to come with me next time. the friend here says I must go, goodbye daughter.

[At this point J. H. H. changed the paper as Mrs. Z. had begun to use the wrong pad for the best writing.]

you hurt us when \* \* [erased.] you do \* \* [possibly 'it' or 'nt.'] take take that James. (I understand.) going now.

[A short pause was followed by a sudden resumption of the writing as if something had been forgotten, since the sitting on the following day had in fact been prearranged for me, and apparently there was knowledge of my general plan to have sitters more than once.]

[Whatever the idea was, it appears in the following communications with J. H. H.]

Shall we meet your friend tomorrow.

(Do you wish it so?)

if you do we will.

(I thought I had better make arrangements for the future and hence intended it for myself.)

[pause.] [I was hesitating on the matter. J H H]

(Well, I will think about it and be ready in the morning.)

as it pleases you.

(Yes, this lady may come. I will make that definite.)

November 9th, 1906.

10.48 a. m. Present Mrs. Z. and J. H. H., the latter only a few minutes at the outset and some twenty minutes or more near the close when called for.

[Again Mrs. Smead did not know who the sitter was, as I managed the matter so that the sitter did not enter the

seance room until after Mrs. Smead had gone into the trance again and she left it before Mrs. Smead came out. Mrs. Smead had been told by myself on Tuesday that I was to have the sitting Friday and I carefully refrained from hinting that any change of program had been adopted. When she came out of the trance to-day I intimated that I had had a stranger present and Mrs. Smead spoke up and said she thought I was to have the sitting. I then explained that I had changed the plan. Toward the close it will be observed that there was a distinct memory of the fact that I had wanted to talk about the future management of the "light." I was therefore called in to have this say while we had an important sitting in other respects as well.]

we [pause.] are here we will get the friend immediately [immediately.] wait

(Yes, I shall.) here. (Shall I remain to take notes?) no.

(All right, I shall leave.) [J. H. H. left the room.]

did you bring his glasses.

(No, his glove, I brought.) [glove placed on table.]

yes, yes, we will tell him. yes I see h \* \* [possibly intended for 'his.'] daughter and I greet you.

yes, You rember [remember] my wearing them in when in the senate, but I need my cl... ['cl' erased.] glasses too. I can see better now only to come herre [here] to talk it troubles about seeing and we wait so often to keep from getting dizzy, yes, dou [do you] want me to let C. talk to you.

(Who is C.?)

he says you ought to know him.

(I don't remember him. Who is C.?)

not C. but... [pause.] you wait. he has become mixed up. the friend was very sick before he came here and it was a long illness he says, and now the [erased.] he is tempted to cough much when he comes near you. yes, so we told him to wait a little and he can try it again. the friend that used the glove would speak more, yes, his...

(Well speak.)

[Change of communicator.]

I used to have a seat with lots of others, yes, and I used to write a great deal, yes, you hear me do you. do you remember how much I used to write and I read much to [too] yes, I can now without my using my eyes [apparently not read at time.] my using my eyes. yes you know I used to use my glasses. now I don't and I... you know there wasn't much grass around our

city home. it was, don't you know what I said. tell me daughter what I said to you. can you not tell me.

(You said there was not much grass around our city home.)

yes, yes, that is what I said (Yes.) and we had one away from there that I liked that did. . . .

(Where do you mean father?)

I [t] was in a different place. we had to go a long way on the cars, yes, you know about it. it was our own state. I mean I used to like to come home to it, yes, we had a pretty place with grass in front and a walk up to the veranda, piazza [piazza] they called them down there. I will rest. tell me if I made you hear me, daughter.

(Yes, you did.) [pause.]

now was there a young lady that came to one assembly that had much crimping of her hair in front and down by her neck, the rest was fixed in a knot. she wore a white dress or ball gown they call'd [called] it and many admired her. you met her then, yes, she just passed here a little while ago while I was speaking to you.

(Was it Miss Dalton?)

[scrawls like letter 'n.'] you know her. (Yes, Miss Dalton.) she was the one greatly admired. I only remember her as one of your friends. it was at the assembly.

(What date please?)

we cannot tell them. I must go now as the friend says he wishes to talk to his son, so dear I will say good morning. we do not need say goodbye now because we can't talk from here to you.

kindly tell son James to come to me. [J. H. H. called and came into the room.] we would talk to you now about what you desired, yes.

(Wait a moment let me fix the pencil.) [I changed the position and point of the pencil.]

better do it Friend H. way.

(All right.) [got a new pencil and placed it between the first and second fingers, as it was at the time between the first finger and the thumb.]

we will not ['not' not read at time.] meet you ton [apparent inversion of 'not.' on . . . not meet you on the morrow (I understand.) an[d] so we would to [erased.] like to talk to you alone. (Good.)

[Mrs. Z. asked to leave the room which she did.]

about your work. you desired me to help you and so I have done what [read 'that.'] I could, what I could for you.

(Yes, father: you have done wonderfully well.)

and now I want to know [pause.] if your desire is for me to keep it for you.

(Yes, let me explain.)

do so. your we... [last two words written while I was beginning my statement.]

(Now the light expects to remain with me until the third day after the Sabbath and then will return home. I would be pleased to have you look after her until I can arrange for further meetings. It may be that you can have meetings with her husband once or twice a week, as you desire.)

we have told them and will for you continue, only James you must not keep me k... [erased.] working all the days. I must go away soon myself (Yes.) and rest. I have worked for the friends. many of them are afraid at first and it is [scrawl.] is .....

(Yes, father: I appreciate all you have done and wish you to rest. I only asked you to look after the light *if you desired*. I will not press the matter. You do as you think best. I shall write to the husband of the light and explain so that the light will not be injured. Would you advise it to rest?)

I will keep on with my part of it, yes, and I will see that no on [e] ['on' erased.] unnecessary work is done from our side. I mean I will not let ann [erased.] any one from here try without the consent of the greater light.

(Good: that is just what I want.)

yes I will do so for it is best. We will watch it carefully now. you can [hesitation in writing 'can.'] c... [suddenly read

(Good; I will let it take its own course and you can direct, as 'can.'] have me for your work as you think best.

with the greater light, the action of the husband. Will that do?)

I do not mean that. I can fix it all right with the lights there, but I mean here.

(While the light remains?) yes,

(Good; all right.)

I will help here first then rest [not clear] rest.

(Good: that's right.)

It was always my way, yes. [pause.] going (Goodbye.) now J.

Mrs. Z.'s husband died of bronchial tuberculosis and suffered torments with his throat before his death. The letter C. probably refers to the name Cullie which she called him. "Harris" is possibly a confusion for Henry Allison, a deceased uncle of Mrs. Z.

Mrs. Z.'s father was a senator in the Canadian Parliament from New Brunswick and was Speaker of the Senate. He had a portrait, life size, which hung with a number of others

in his home and another in the Canadian Senate. He, to use Mrs. Z.'s language, was "perfectly crazy about the picture." It was exactly as described here, and tho the photograph of it was lying on the table, it was not visible to Mrs. Smead, who could not have seen it for the pillow and head rest even if her eyes had been open. It was almost a profile and he wore a collar which is apparently a standing one, tho this is not as clear as may be desirable. The picture represents him as wearing the Speaker's robe and holding the Speaker's gloves in his hand. He gave this portrait to Mrs. Z. who was always fond of it.

He was near-sighted and always wore glasses when driving, but not when reading. He spent a great deal of time writing, both on Parliamentary matters and in connection with estates of which he was executor. He and his daughter lived in several places while he was in Parliament. One of them was a hotel and there was no grass in front of it, neither was there any to speak of in front of the other places they stayed. There were no trees around these places, but there were trees in the Parliament grounds. His home was in Sackville, N. B., a thousand miles distant. It stood in a grass covered lawn surrounded by trees and approached by a drive and with a piazza about it on which he walked two hours every day of his life there. The Miss Dalton described was the niece of Lord Lisgar, and after a great deal of difficulty it was ascertained that she died about two years ago.

---

November 12th, 1906.

10.30 a. m. Present Mr. C., J. H. H. a few minutes at beginning and close.

we are [pause.] with you yes.

(Good morning.)

and do yo [u] want thy friends. we will try, wait.

(Good, I shall.) [pause of one minute.]

leave me now, James.

(Yes, I shall.) [J. H. H. leaves room.]

[Mr. C. placed his wife's ring on the table.]



we have tried to help her, your lady friend, yes, she is better, but we asked her to wait and do you want her to try alone. (Yes, please.) I came to you and was very sick. I could do nothing. you know I had a little bird with me. it sang so sweetly that I did not think there could be any trouble for us as I listened to him, no, [scrawl.] wait. she will come back.

there are two little children here friend, a little boy with golden hair, that are near you, yes, and the dark lady. I mean the one with dark hair. she will try to speak again now. you brought the ring I told you about, yes, do you remember it, it, and how sick I was when I came here. do you not rember [remember.]

(Who is talking?)

you do not want me to tell all about ourselves do you.

(Who is talking to me?)

I will not tell my name. I am only know [n] as the lady with dark hair. I do not want to talk of my name. I had one alright, yes, but I do not like to tell it to everyone. I had a very pleasant time on earth and the end came, then I suffered more than very many. do you know how I suffered. you know too how much you cared for me. now I was sorry to leave you and you know that too. I cannot talk to you as clearly as I could were I in the body again, but you can forgive me for all I did not right. will you forgive me so that e a r t h l y troubles will not keep me back. I want to go higher and have tried, but must be forgiven for It is the only way to do for me and I ask you to forgive me. I will come to you when I get away from the earth awhile. then we can talk better, but now I must not. everything comes to trouble me so easily. If you will just tell me you will forgive me I will go away.

(I certainly forgive you whoever you are.) you know me, yes. (Are you Henrietta?)

I told you I would not give my name, but was known as the dark lady. we knew each other well as my ring will tell, yes. so of course you must know it is me. you will know I must. I am sorry for all I did wrong and \* \* \* \* [words superposed on previous writing.] much, could you but know to [erased.] how [scrawly] how I have hoped and longed to ask you to forgive me you would know that I am more sorry than any one can tell and now I will try to go and live nearer [J. H. H. came in.] the greater light that I may come again to you better for having told you about it. I h... (Do you forgive me also?) I have found that I was alive. I forgave all without a thought for anything but that I must \* \* [erased.] be forgiven. now I will keep my promise to come when I have learned how better so to tell you what you would. I mean my name.

[Mr. C. remarked to me in an undertone that he had not got-

ten any name and I replied that this seldom occurred in this case in its present condition.]

I do not want to now. you know I would not go higher until I was forgiven by you. yes, so goodbye my deares [t]. I will go as they tell me I must leave you again.

(Let me change the pencil.) no, goodbye. (Goodbye.) H.

[Mr. C. asked what 'H' meant and I explained that it was my father's initial, and the hand wrote.]

no, not R. H., but H. James. [pause.] good morning.

When Mrs. Smead came out of the trance she said that, just as she was laying her head on the pillow at the beginning of the sitting, she saw the same woman that she saw at the sitting of the first man who had a sitting. She said that she saw no one else.

Last night while Mrs. Smead and myself were talking on religious matters and her husband's situation in them she said that she saw a large light pass across the hall. This morning at breakfast she said that she saw many apparitions during the night. One of them was a woman who seemed to be wearing a black silk dress and walked from the bureau to the trunk near the door of the bedroom.

During the trance I came down stairs instead of waiting all the while in the hall and the following was the experience of Mrs. LeM.

Mrs. LeM. shows signs of outside influences and felt as if she would go into a trance. This was possibly coincident with the time the communicator said she must go away awhile. This is a conjecture on my part from the time I came down and what is said in the record on that point. Mrs. LeM. gave the names Stevenson McCleod and Helen Farnham as connected with the sitter and said that a yellow chrysanthemum was connected with him and that he was nervous.

On inquiry which I at once made, knowing that Mr. C. had come in with a yellow chrysanthemum on his coat, Mrs. LeM. had seen the man when he rang the bell, but could recall only seeing him with his back to the door. She paid no further attention to him. I met him at the door and Mrs. LeM. remained in the library. She could only have caught

a glimpse of him as he rang the bell. When I admitted him I did not see his face or the front of his body until I opened the door which has a glass in it, making persons outside visible from within. It is probable that Mrs. LeM. saw the chrysanthemum subliminally at least. She went on after further inquiry to describe his hair and beard as iron grey which is correct and that he was a large sized man, also correct.

In regard to the communicator it may be worth mentioning that I had written the man to whom this communicator was related last Saturday and he probably received my letter this morning near the time that the sitting took place. I mention this as a matter of record and not that I can attach any more value to it than that of a coincidence.

---

November 13th, 1906.

10.25 a. m. Present Mr. C. and J. H. H. J. H. H. absent from the room soon after beginning until near the close.

we are here, yes, and would talk to you first.

(Good, I will listen.)

we will come to . . . mary [w]ants to come to you [difficulty in reading and Mr. C. asked to sit down at a little distance.] wants to come to you yes. she will on the morrow, James. (Good.) do you want a friend brought [not read.] brought now then leave us.

(Father, two things. First I intended a friend to come tomorrow at least a part of the time. Will that be right?)

but Mary was promised to come

(I will let Mary come.)

two Sabbaths past to come after the first one.

(Good, I accept that correction.)

and the other one what is it.

(Father, the person who came yesterday was not the right person for the one present. Can you get one of his friends today? The communications yesterday were relevant to the first gentleman who came here, but not relevant to the person here yesterday. Can you get a friend today?)

I did not get her. she had been promised to come back and tell what she could.

(Yes, and I intend that she shall have a chance in the future sometime.)

[pause.] we told her to come while we were looking after the light

(Good, I understand. I...) and we had to let her talk let [first 'let' not read rightly at time.]

shal[1] we try for thy friend, James.

(Yes, I shall leave. Goodbye for the present.)

[J. H. H. leaves the room.]

Tell the lady to come, yes. wait, they have gone for her, gone.

[pause.] shall she talk to you alone. I came to you and as I could not speak I made you \* \* [erased] you know who I was. I could see you knew me. you are so kind to come to me. I came and as ['as' erased.] tell you I knew my own ring you have it and what did [pencil ran off sheet.] with my other [pause.] jewels. did y[ou] keep them, for I would that you had them here. there were so many places we went together that I could tell you about. you want me to tell you who I am, who I am. yes H arriet. you know now I was H A R R E t, no, you was very near to me. I was to you. did you hear me tell me ['me' erased.] tell you my name.

(No, I did not.)

I said it so that you could. I thought How will help...

(Please try once more to give me your name.)

you dearest if I do.... H e.... Just don't [pause.] I say get it \* \* [scrawls which might be an attempt at a capital E.] yes to me if you hear me. H E N R I E T T A yes. I have told you twice that I was here and you did not tell me about where you put my other trinkets. did you let the other have my [circles made and probably intended for the word 'rings.'] and chain.

(I divided them up among the children.)

we would not [?] could have talked about many things had you have kept more of them yourself, but my wedding ring was more to me than all the rest together. you know about how happy I was then, yes. It is not the only beautiful day that I had. I was happy almost all the time you know I can tell you dear that I was happiest when we were alone [t]hen we could tell each other of all that troubled us, and no one knew but ourselves. we [erased.] will you tell the little ones I am still caring for them. I love them now and it is hard not to feel there [their] kisses an[d] no, they cannot kiss mother until they come here.

[excitement and wavy writing follows.] yes it is hard not to \* \* \* [have ?] come come to you, you here. I wish you could bring them to me. it would be so nice to have them, ye[s]. we mustop [must stop] now. want to first first fix this first for her fix this [scrawl.] she cannot use it rightly now. change it. you can change it now. I will help her yet. fix it.

[Mr. C. called J. H. H. who comes in and seeing what is wanted fixed the pencil and left again.]

(Do you watch over me?)

yes I am [written 'ma.'] going home with you when you go. I do Stay with you and now you will know I have tried to impress you with my presence so much that I did begin to feel that y... [pencil ran off paper.] you did not think I was near you. It [superposing] is different here that I had suppos... [superposing.] supposed it was. I did not think I would come and ask you about the things I had left and [superposed on 'about.'] and now I find that they keep ['h' made first instead of 'k' and converted into 'k' by turning the 'n' shaped part into an 'r.'] the earth his [?] [possibly intended for 'here.'] together likke [like] a chain chain.

If I had to be here alone I would not want to stay. It is because I have other[s] with me you know who who I mean. I have two little ones here to care for, yes, the largest is a boy with golden hair and blue eyes: the girl is [J. H. H. came in as time was up and past.] now [or how.]

(Yes, father. The time is up. Let me ask a question. Can ....)

no, not yet. the lady said Good[b]y to her friend that is near you. she is his wife. now James.

(Can we give the other light down stairs a meeting tonight?)

no, not then. (When?) Mary will give up if you so desire. we...

(No, I would be glad if we could divide the time because I promised the lady tomorrow. You decide it with Mary.)

and tell you then (Yes.) Mary will be all right

(Yes, I know she will.) goodbye. (Goodbye.) [pause.]

we would have you tell us more about coming.

(All right.)

Shall I keep my place as guiding light to her

(Yes, father, but only as you see fit to direct it after the light gets home. I will tell the husband only to sit as you direct with the aid of the greater light.)

it would be better so.

(The light goes home tomorrow.)

I know. what I wa[n]ted is, if you desired me, to continue to guide others to her to her as I did friend H., yes.

(That's right.)

I wanted it clear what I should do,

(Yes, that's right.) goodbye. (Goodbye.)

After Mrs. Smead became conscious she said she saw a spirit that was dressed in white and a blue cross in front and in connection with it the letter H.

The name Henrietta was correct. It is the name of the sitter's wife who is deceased. But as Mr. C. asked for this person by name (p. 689) it is not evidential. The manner of correcting Harriet which had been mentioned by the sitter the day previous was spontaneous and interesting. Harriet, however, was the name of a relative, deceased, the mother of Mrs. Quentin who had two sittings earlier (pp. 641-5, 660-4), and Mrs. Smead had no knowledge whatever of Mr. C.'s relation to Mrs. Quentin.

---

November 14th, 1906.

10.45 a. m. Present J. H. H. first half and Mrs. B. second half of sitting. Sitting longer than usual by thirty minutes.

H says don't give up.

(No, I'll not give up.)

is it is better, will be better.

(You meant not to give up this meeting?)

no.

(All right. I'll not give up the work.)

that is it [pause.]

I wanted to bid you goodby James. you know I could not when I left you to come here.

(Who is this?) me Mary.

(Yes, Mary, that is true. It was a sudden parting.)

and I shall be away for a while and don't worry.

(No, I shall not. How is your father?)

I my mother came here and I took her all around the house (when was that?) just two day[s] since. I did it and you did not hear us ta [pause] lking.

(Mary, the light saw a lady that I guessed was your mother. How was she dressed?) [Asked latter part of question before I thought that any answer would be subliminal.]

you had what she was looking for.

(What was that?)

she could not find it.

(What was it?)

[pause.] It was what she wore much [pause.]

(Can you give the name of it?)

and it was not much good. I told her but she wants it back with my jewels [written 'mj ewels'] yes.

(If I can find it I will. What is it?)

you must get it back with them [circles made to indicate rings] (Rings?) yes. (Good.) she was worried because she could (Wait a moment.) [hand superposing.] not find them.

(What was she looking for?)

the rings.

(I know them now. I shall get them.)

yes, I told her so now. I must leave as father said another was to come.

(Just a moment. How is your father?)

did I not tell you.

(Not this time.) we would go and help him. mother has had to be coaxed continually to keep her from staying to [too] long.

(All right, I understand.)

she care [s] so much for him that she can hardly leave him to go to rest.

(You...)

I mean my mother.

(I understand. Now when this light goes home you can report anything of importance when meetings are held.)

and when they are, no, if necessary. [J. H. H. stamped foot on floor to call Mrs. B.] goodbye, James. (Goodbye, Mary.) [J. H. H. left the room.] [Mrs. B. enters.]

Good morning little girlie [apparently not read rightly.] no Little.

(What will I tell Lillie?)

no, I said little Girlie.

(Oh, you said Girlie.)

yes, and dou [do you] know Bess why I was captain Captain.

(No I don't know.)

I wanted my brave little wife to feel she could be supported in strong arms.

(Won't you try to give the name I called you by.)

you know it was an ordinary one, yes, common folks have it. I will have our friend here write it the wrong way, then you can find it out [then followed the name George written in mirror writing backward and so spelled egroeG] yes, you can see it B [letter 'B' in mirror writing.] [possibly attempt at initial of surname.]

(I mean when I spoke to you very tenderly.) what on dou [do you] mean. it was one of my pet names you ar... are thinking of you must no [last three words in mirror writing.]

(Well, never mind. I won't press you.)

that is the way I will tell you not to be living way back there but now. we are living....

(I will not have an opportunity to talk to you in so long. Am I wise to continue in this course?)



[Question made ambiguous intentionally as two distinct things were in mind, one the work of psychic research and the other more personal.]

living ahead. only when we come to talk dow [do] we live in the past. I told you Bess that I would come to your home where you stay and I will do it. do not worry.

(Is it well at home?)

no [erased.] how do you mean. I would keep myself free were I you. if you were with me I could keep you company and I do, yes. I go to you so many times and I would if it were wise stay alway[s] by your side. no we have to part of the time get out of the earth atmosphere and then we can come back easier. I have not been home though [?] unless I go from you to them. I cannot find out unless I go to them. no dear, I know you need [erased.] need me and I shall stay as long as you wish until you come to me, until you come to me, yes.

(When am I coming to you?)

I cannot tell you now. It would not be wise,,yes.

(I have not finished my work here.)

no, not yet. you must help us yet, to help us come near to friends there. that is what I want most.

(Do you wish me to sit alone or will I have Miss M. sit too?)

alone sometimes for me, yes. do you mean mamma.

[Sitter evidently did not understand this question put by communicator, as her query following indicates.]

(Tell mamma what and who is mamma?)

no, not all the time, yes that is what I told you before. now what does he mean when he says tell mamma. I, R. H. said it for him. he needs to rest a no ['no' erased.] while. [pause.]

Yes I am back.

(Yes, well how is it there?)

and I [pause.] could see the old home where we left together, yes, and I y. . . . wished you and I could come out again together and get in the carry-all together ang [and] go out in the world alone once more. we did once, yes, and that driveway is a, was a happy one in the cars. you and I came out on the front v. . . ['v' erased.] piazza [piazza] and then and then we said goodbye to all those friends that came to see us get married, yes, and the rooms were was pretty and you looked so sweet to me. I did not want the rest there and was glad when we were *all* alone and so were you.

(Do you remember the curious wire we received.)

we, I was thinking \* \* \* the boy but could not remember what that boy [?] wanted. I saw him but I could not not just now remember what he came for.

(Whom did you see?)

the message you, I begun to tell you all about that day, but you asked me about something and now I must wait.

(I will not interrupt again.)

we had a colored man to drive us to the cars and he was sorry to have you go away and the cook to [too] yes was afraid and was worried for fear she would not see you again, yes. when I go [?] home she says she is waiting for her missus to return, yes.

(Has Maum Mollie gone over to you?)

you know they were happier [happier] then than they are now. so many of them do not enjoy that freedom they wanted b... Bessie and they were happier in [a] home like yours, yes. you were good to them and so was mother and father and they loved them.

(Have you seen my little brother?)

yes, we have often been together. I am going to tell you that she does not want her Bessie to leave her again. I told her what you asked me about and she said tell her I do not approve.

(Does she think I would be unhappy?)

what you asked me if she knew. She said what I have told you and I will tell her you asked me about her, yes, and now when I come to you again I will tell you that what you asked me to tell you today, yes. Papa is agoing, yes. Goodby.

When Mrs. Smead came out of the trance she said that she saw an old-fashioned candlestick with a candle in it, and also the face of a little boy. Mrs. B. asked if it was a beautiful child. Mrs. Smead replied that it was a pretty child and had light hair. Mrs. B. remarked that he had golden hair and blue eyes.

The reference to the rings by my wife might have been an evidential incident but for a most interesting circumstance which would be a ground for very grave suspicion if we did not have other and independent evidence of supernormal power on the part of Mrs. Smead. On the night of the 11th as the above record shows Mrs. Smead saw an apparition as described. When she told it to me in the morning I said I thought I knew who it was, and thought of my wife's mother some of whose jewelry I knew was in the trunk to which the apparition had gone, but I said nothing more and never whispered about it. When the communicator referred to the rings I at once thought of the two rings of my wife's mother

and grandmother which were in that trunk locked in a tin box inside the locked trunk.

But after the sitting, reflecting on the meaning of the expressed desire to have the rings brought back and in the statement that they could not be found, the following circumstance came to my memory.

Early in this series of sittings my wife (p. 610) alluded to her watch and expressed the desire that I should have it near me. I went to this trunk when Mrs. Smead was not in the room and hunted for the watch there, taking out all the trinkets kept there of Mrs. Hyslop's and when they were replaced I left by mistake a little box with her mother's and grandmother's rings in it, and two little tags on the outside indicated whose they were with my wife's initials on them. Mrs. Smead found the box lying on the bed and gave it to me. She had ample opportunity to examine the contents and also the tags.

The reference, therefore, has absolutely no significance for the supernormal, and but for the independent evidence of its existence, would be a just basis for very serious suspicions. I know her personally well enough to say and believe that she would not even examine the tags on the box, but my personal belief has no value in the light of possibilities when the sceptic wishes to have much better tests.

I had not returned the box to its place, but had locked it up in another tin box downstairs. This Mrs. Smead did not know, and hence the rings could not be found in their proper place.

George was the correct name of the communicator and it was not known by Mrs. Smead. But it was not the name Mrs. B. wished to have written. This was correctly given at the end of the sitting.

The communications to Mrs. B. are all perfectly pertinent and characteristic. They were driven to the cars by a colored man and what is said in reference to him is correct. The reference to the piazza and what occurred there is correct also, whether it be attributable to subliminal guessing or not. But the most striking incident of the sitting was the word "Papa." It was the name that Mr. B. always used in

signing his letters, and would not be the most natural way for a subliminal to speak of a person whom it assumes to be the sitter's husband.

The next series of sittings was unconnected with those which precede and will not appear to some readers to have the same value evidentially. But as they are associated with the death of my father-in-law they should be included in this volume. Personally, and under the circumstances, I regard them as containing quite as genuine phenomena as any of them, but will not urge this view against those who wish to consider the opportunity for previous information by Mrs. Smead. She did not have such knowledge I am quite certain, but if she had been so inclined there was the opportunity to have employed detective methods for obtaining information.

The sittings which I first notice were held by Mr. and Mrs. Smead in the regular work which they are doing in my absence. I was, of course, not present and the record was reported to me. I had not intimated to them that my father-in-law had died, and Mrs. Smead had not even learned of his illness when she was in the city for the experiments.

My father-in-law died on the 14th of December, 1906. On the second of January, 1907, my wife purported to communicate at a sitting of the Smeads and spontaneously asked when I was coming. On the 5th of January I had a sitting with another medium, the Mrs. Smith of the articles published in the *Journal* (Vol. I., p. 133), at which my father-in-law purported to communicate and gave much evidence of his identity. That record cannot be published here, but is mentioned as connected with the phenomena. On January 7th, as reported below, my father-in-law purported to communicate through Mrs. Smead when I was not present, as the record indicates. Mr. and Mrs. Smead did not know of his death and did not learn the fact until a later sitting, at which he gave enough for Mr. Smead to infer who it was.

January 7th, 1907.

10.30 a. m.

Present Mr. and Mrs. Smead.

(All is ready.) we are here.

(Very good. Good morning, friends.)

George H. W. ['W' resembles an 'H.']

(George H. H.?)

no, W. (George W. W.?) yes.

(What was the last name beginning with W? What does W. mean?) [pause, and pencil drops from the hand. Pencil replaced.]  
 tws [apparently intended for 'it was.'] it was on \* \* \* \* [apparently one part of the illegible writing is an attempt at 'w mon,' which the following clearly written message explains.]

[Pencil changed in its position.]

wass [was] in the tenth month that I came here. the old  
 c \* \* colored mammie \* \* [apparently 'think'] \* \* [apparent  
 attempt to repeat the last word.

(It is hard to hear you. Try to write plainly.)

[Pause, hand limp, pencil drops, and breathing affected. Pencil replaced.]

(What does all this mean?)

[Pause and pencil again falls from the hand.]

(If you want me to fix that pencil, move the hand over to me so that I can tell.)

[Hand limp and relaxed. Pencil removed. Pulse slow and full, breathing deep and sustained. Finally hand asks for pencil.]

yes, the old mammie came. she says tell her not to put on those li. . [or 'ti.'] [erased.] light garments. then it will not ker  
 [?] [pause.] hurt her when. . . not hurt her to have her Marser  
 George to come back when [sheet changed.] yes.

(Who is this message for?)

marsar George wi. . . [pencil ran off paper.] wife she says

(George H. W.?)

no, not that George. that George is connected with thy friend Hyslop.

(What George is it?)

the one that belongs to the lady near him nn [erased.] no, we much of the time, yes. mammie wore sometimes a dress with a little flower ana [and a.] kind of purple stripe on it, a white cap and a nectie [necktie] thhat [that] was a big one.

(Who is W in George H. W.?)

[Pause.] yes, there seems to be a girl of twelve yrs [years] with dark brown hair. she is studying at a long table in the school. her hair curls and is tied with a white [sheet changed.] tied with a white ribbon. she has a long sleeved apron on, yes.

(Who is this message for? What is the meaning' of this thing?)

well, James will know. (All right.)

tell him that mother H. is with th.. George much of the time.

(I will.) he will know.

(All right. Free your mind.)

we will come back. wait. (Today? Here?) yes. [Mrs. S. became conscious, but writing continued by control.] it will be best w... wait before the friends come again. (Yes.) and we would like these meetings at this time as you are in the habit of doing [doing], yes. we may wish to bring friends and let them try, but not always at present.

(I would like my friend Dr. Upton to come.)

we may let the friend come later. now we will send for him. Good morning.

(I understand that we shall sit tomorrow.)

that is it.

(I shall return from S— Thursday. Shall we sit then?)

not so, we will come on the morrow and then wait.

(Till next week any more sittings?) yes. (Is this Robert Hyslop writing?)

H. with friend [sheet changed.] with friend Myers.

(I am glad to have you come. You are always welcome.)

yes, thanks.

(What was the trouble with Mrs. Smead Friday and part of Saturday?)

we will tell you on the morrow.

(All right. God be with you and with us.)

Friend, we would have friend H. know concerning the other time we came to examine the light, R.

There are apparently points of some interest in this sitting. As I have remarked above, my father-in-law died in December, and my wife purporting to communicate on January 2nd asked when I was coming. Apparently his name was attempted at this sitting. It was Geore W. Hall. It is possible that it would have been gotten rightly but for Mr. Smead's way of making the inquiry. I wrote to Mr. Smead, after he sent me the original record, to know what the meaning of the sitting was, pretending, as it were, that I did not understand it. He replied it had no meaning to him: said in fact, that "it was all Dutch" to him and Mrs. Smead. All that he could do was to conjecture that it had some possible reference to me from the presence of my name as the person who would know. This was his only clue.

I inquired of my father-in-law's second wife to know if

they ever had negro servants in the family and her reply was that they have always had them. The most significant incident, however, in the record is the statement that "George H. W.," later in the sitting, corrected apparently to "H" instead of "W.," is connected with Mr. Smead's friend Hyslop. But the answer to the query about "George H. W.," that it was not right and that this George as asked for was connected with me was a most significant incident, most probably wholly unknown to Mrs. Smead. I had named my little boy George Hall Hyslop after his grandmother. This was the boy whom Mr. Hall frequently called in his delirium before his death and of which I have recorded one coincidence (p. 548). Apparently it is this boy to which reference is made in the correction of the name.

I know nothing about the dress of the old negro "Mammie." But I made inquiry of Mrs. Hall and find that the dress is correctly described.

The reference to the little girl studying is a fair description of my older daughter, except the curled hair. But I have no reason to suppose that she is meant, neither do I know of anything to make the reference coincidental.

I have been told through two other mediums that Mr. Hall met his mother first on the other side. I was told through Mrs. Smead when the prediction of his death was made (p. 695) that "mother" was with him. I took it at the time to mean that it was his first wife, my wife's mother, the statement purporting to come from my wife. But in the Washington case I was told it was *his* mother and her name was given as Gretchen, her name being Margaret, as I afterward learned from Mr. Hall himself before he died. It is therefore pertinent here to find allusion made to his mother being with him much of the time.

He took ill in October, the tenth month, and died in December. The error in time is apparent. His memory was impaired during the illness.

In a sitting on January 30th, I not being present, there was an apparent, but confused, attempt to communicate again for a short time. But nothing evidential occurred, tho a reference was made to a latch key, and then it was said, after



finding that he could not communicate:—"Tell Mr. Hyslop that the father he was wishing to hear from is all safe and that his wife cares for him and his needs." On February 11th apparently my father-in-law tried controlling, and had to give it up before the sitting ended. I quote that part of it which pertains to him.

February 11th, 1907.

10.30 a. m.

[Present Mr. and Mrs. Smead.]

[Prayer. Dr. Hodgson's, and Robert Hyslop's articles on the table. Mrs. Hyslop's and others not used.]

(All is ready.)

Hyslop, Hodgson. Father \* \* is all right here. Tell James he is with me here [?] yes. sorry he did not believe when there. had no farther time [?] in this. you tell him James friend.

(Yes.)

Father saw considerable of your life then, James, and doubted much, your life there.

(All right.)

we came with him to you before, yes, and there were so many that he was weary after the journey that he said he would wait. journey over to our side of life, james, you know.

(Yes, that is good.)

could he have believed more he would have given more to your good work.

(Yes, I get that.)

I will go to him now. you tell him friend.

(Yes, I will. Please tell me who you are.)

mary Hyslop. [written in a scrawly manner.] he knows it.

[Mrs. Hyslop's article opened.] (Do you see it?)

it helps me, yes, and the little tray to [too] I know has held me before.

(What is it that I have opened?) [pause.]

m.... [Then rectangular or square figure drawn with circles in it.]

[Change of Control.]

Let me try once. I can tell my son that my business was a good one. I could furnish him with a good Suit at any time, yes.

(You are doing well.)

I could too tell a fairly go... [good] story for entertainment of others. I used to think my mary was gone forever from me.

(Good.)

yes, but I have found her. (Yes.) my only daughter, yes.

(Please to tell me who is talking.)

H. will know if you tell him that I am once of . . . just say H. 3 will do for me.

(H. three?)

yes, it will do for me. [great excitement in hand.] it is jolly fun, yes, to come, yes. I was \* \* \* \* \* have. I \* \* \* remember much to tell him. I think . . . no, no. [pause.] yes, he knows how some people could not \* \* me happy, but I would be when I got away. [pause.]

Could I have had more experience with this lady's work I would have known more and took an [?] an . . . . I should have . . . well James will understand me. I know he will. I saw but little of it. [pause.]

The sitting continued a little while longer with some advice by the regular controls as to the manner of conducting the experiments, and then closed.

There are some exceedingly good things in this sitting. It is quite apparent that it is my father-in-law that is meant. This is indicated clearly by the association with the name of my wife, Mary Hyslop, and the word "father." But the communications make it much clearer. He did not believe that his daughter Mary survived death. He did not believe in a future life when he was living and he saw considerable of my life in this work. Possibly the statement that "we came with him to you before" refers to the apparition of him by my Secretary (p. 548). It is also evident that the reference to his giving more if he had believed is the same as later communications on the same matter (Cf. p. 707). He had done all he could to discourage my work and I did nothing that could be interpreted as trying to interest him in it financially.

Two statements are extremely good. The allusion to his ability to furnish me with a good suit apparently points to his former business in woolen cloth (Cf. p. 711), and he used to tell stories at banquets and public meetings. He was not either a good speaker or a good story teller, but he always felt the obligation to tell some story.

There is also one statement which I cannot explain in detail, but which is sufficient to prove his identity completely to me. It would involve matters too personal and private to mention here. It expresses exactly the facts and would be recognized by all who knew him intimately.

It was this sitting that led Mr. and Mrs. Smead to conjecture that my father-in-law had died. When I went for later sittings I admitted it.

10.30 a. m.

March 25th, 1907.

[Present Mr. and Mrs. Smead. J. H. H. absent.]

(All ready.)

it is confusing. you must know and record it so. we do it as we are told [told]. Greetings Friends.

(Cordial greetings.)

you are waiting. [pause and then excitement and twitching of hand.] we will only wait for the reply. you can of your own self believe what so Ever pleases thee.

(Is it the Cardinal?)

the what.

(Is it the Cardinal?) n o. (All right.) [pause and excitement.]

they will not believe that Either. [pause.]

The jolly little man says he is surprised to find so many that he used to find think were dead. he is waiting to have his Fr. . . . [pause.] he is in an easy chair and says tell them that Geo. [period inserted.] is all right. it is not a rocking chair, but just an easy one soft cushion like padded [padded] you would call it. he has a dressing gown with a cord around it, yes.

(Go ahead. That is good.) [pause and excitement.]

he seems to thing [all indistinctly written.] it says he was once in a very small state in EUROPE and the place town was near a beautiful lake. the house was on the side of a mountain. it had many eaves, yes. [pause and great excitement. Mrs. S. coughed violently.] you wi. . . wait. [pause.]

(All right now.)

you see my throat sometimes will make me stop. I must go back now to ask George about it.

(Please to write your name.)

when we went to this mountain house it was a foreign country. he did not know the language and he [pause.] we had better wait a little. [pause.]

(All right now friend. Will this friend try to tell me things so that I shall know who it is. It is important he should do so.)

When son James comes he can do it. (All right.) yes he will from time to time tell some facts about himself here.

(Shall I fix the pencil.) no. (All right.)

When son James comes he \* \* [possibly 'will.'] know him.

(It would be valuable if the name was given here to me.)

he has partly so aranged [arranged.] it at other times. (Explain please.) it is all right.

(If I get the name, science cannot say telepathy from James.)  
no, we have said it here, H. 3, you see, yes. so that is all right.

(I understand now.)

(Shall we sit tomorrow?)

if it is so arranged. R. Hyslop.

(All right. Thanks. I shall send it to James.)

Apparently there was some other communicator than my father-in-law at the first of the sitting, but it is just as apparent that he is meant a little further on. He always wrote his name "Geo." and it is interesting here to find the period inserted by the automatic writing. Mrs. Smead of course knew nothing about this fact, tho it is so common with the name George that we cannot urge it as evidential. I do not recall, however, a single instance of this in the Smead case before.

My father-in-law had an easy chair which was cushioned and was not a rocking-chair. He sat in it a great deal with dressing gown which had a cord around it. These two facts were absolutely unknown to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. The allusion to the small country in Europe is evidently to Switzerland, to which reference is made later (Cf. p. 707).

The next sittings at which any reference was made to him were held when I was present and are given below.

---

April 9th, 1907.

10.30 a. m. Present Mr. Smead and J. H. H.

[Hand trembled almost immediately. After a minute it paused and then began to write in half a minute, trembling slightly, while the first few words were slowly written and were quite clear. Apparently it was some one else who controlled than the one who soon began to communicate.]

We come. we, yes. [pause.]

(Good morning.)

[trembling.] Will I get ['t' carefully crossed.] him. (Yes.)  
now. (Yes you may.) [pause.] [trembling.] I wish to wait.  
(Good.) Yes.

[Change of control.]

I am here now James. I am G. H.

(Yes, I know. Free your mind. How are you?)

They have [pause.] my things now to do as they please with [not read at time.] with. It was very different when my Mary was with me and \* \* mother, yes, Mary and you knew all about it. [pause and scrawls.] yes way back in those early times [not read correctly at time.] no you do not hear. [pause.]

could I have believed then what I know now it would have been different, yes.

(Yes, I believe that.)

yes, yes, I could have materially helped you [materially read 'made up.'] and will materially materially, yes. [I read the word materially, but signified that one instance was not read by saying 'morally'] no materially. [read.] yes, will not they do it for me now.

(I do not know. You will have to influence them.)

it is my \* \* James that part of it \* \* money. [pencil fixed.] It should be given to your work, a part of my money. I wish I could have it now to do it over again, yes.

(Well it can't be done now, so don't worry.)

tell them I want it done. (Very good.) I mean the mother and son. (Yes.) well I [read 'will it'] well I will tell them. (Very good.) [pause.]

It was a better change for me, James. I can [read 'came.'] no can now be with my own, yes. you remember when we went [undulating lines representing mountains were drawn.] (Yes.) yes, and the pleasure we had. fix this. [Pencil fixed. Had slipped up in fingers.] over on that other land where some of the people we did not understand. the houses on the [mentally read 'hours,' then audibly 'houses.'] no, no, no. we did not understand their way of speaking [not read correctly at time.] no, their way of speaking. (Good.) [pause.]

you remember the funny little hous... [pencil ran off paper.] houses yes, [pause.] on the mountains, yes. (Tell all about them.) Mary was there too. you know about them. we could not talk as they did (That's right.) and I tried to [pause.] yes, wait. (Yes, I'll wait.)

[Hand relaxed and turned over to one side, and in a moment began to tremble again.]

yes and we had to give them so... [erased.] souvenirs of our money to ['souvenirs' read *some* with accent indicating it was not all.] no souvenirs of our money for keeps, yes you know, you. [sheet changed.] you know what I mean. (Yes, I do.) yes, they do not do that here where we come fr... ['where' first read correctly, then read 'when,' then again 'where.'] [Hand moved as if to erase.] yes, from. (That's right.) [pause and scrawls.]

It cost a great deal to travel in those places, James. [Pause.]

Hand turned over and relaxed.] (Wait a moment.) [pencil fixed.] and we enjoyed seeing them wait for it, yes [Long pause.] yes we used to take fine walks out on those mountains, yes it was when the cares of life were few then, yes. [pause.] Mary was a good daughter, yes. (Yes, she was.) and [pause.] we will be good to you. (Yes, thank you.) help you she says all the time. [pause.]

(Yes, Mary, I think you are helping all the time.) [I assumed she was present and had used an intermediary.] [pause.]

Mary is not here this time. we are two [not read.] two H's [second 'two' read 'more.'] no, [pause.] we are 2 H's yes, here. (Good.) yes [pause.] you know about my coming here.

(Yes, I do.)

well [pause.] when I went to that house just after wards where I used to live it was all dark. the curtains were ['curtains' not read.] curtains were all drawn and it looked lik... [erased.] lonely and I did not want to stay. I was surprised that they should want [to] mourn when they did not care. I was glad to be free, yes. you understand me James.

(Yes, I understand.)

yes I did come to you so I tha... [erased.] that I could tell you, yes, I wanted to tell you that I was alive still. (Yes.) yes.

(Do you remember how soon you came?) [I was thinking of two occasions when I asked this question, one, that of his apparition to my Secretary, and the other of his communicating through Mrs. Smead, January 7th last.]

came where.

(Came to me.)

as soon as I left the earth Mary brought me to you, but I could not talk ['talk' read 'tell.'] no, could [not] talk. yes, It because I was weak when I tried to come back.

(Did any one see you?)

[pause.] where did you mean.

(When you came to my home.) [pause.] you know the lady saw me and I tried to mak[e] you see me.

(Yes, that's right.) [pause.]

when I go back I will tell mary about it, yes.

(Yes, that's good. I kept quiet about it.) yes. [pause.]

yes, I am beginning to forget so I will go and rest, [Hand relaxed and moving back across the paper went down about two inches and paused.]

[Change of control.]

James my son, yes, we have been to [erased.] trying to help you. we are sure to do it, yes, and as you see I have brought (Wait a moment.) [superposing.] [pencil changed.] [pause.]

you a person near you th. . . [pencil ran off sheet.] that could tell you some things. I [?] yes, I will ['I will' read 'divine' at time, and paper changed.]

I will tell you we have and instructed him as to what to do asay [and say] to you, that is, things that you could, no would help to know him,

(Good, tell them.) yes, and he will come again. (Good.) yes, he is a pleasant person to talk and does it well. I can better now do it. [pause.] yes. It is getting time for us to go and we must soon [pause.]

(Yes, I shall return tomorrow.)

yes, we said it so for you.

(Good, thank you.)

yes, Hyslop, [pencil broke from heavy pressure, and I put another in the hand.] Hall George W. yes and he has a small George. well we must go. we could talk for ever.

(Yes, I know.)

yes, but now we have to stop [pause, and I held the hand in mine for a few moments.] going James, yes."

After she became conscious Mrs. Smead complained of pain in the left eye and inability to see with either of them. She said in response to my question whether she could remember anything, that at first when she sat down she saw some mountains.

She also told me that last night she "saw" Winifred sitting in a stately position all alone in her room writing.

George W. Hall is the name of my father-in-law who died last December, and an apparition of him was seen three and a half hours later in my house by my Secretary, just after I had received the telegram announcing his death (p. 547). He left a widow and son, a fact possibly known by Mrs. Smead. But she knew absolutely nothing about the pertinence of the reference to his money affairs. He always discouraged me in my work and would do nothing for it tho quite able to do so.

He took a trip with his family in Europe in 1883 before I knew his daughter Mary, who subsequently became my wife, but I know nothing of the incidents which are here told apparently of this trip. Mrs. Smead knew that my wife studied music in Germany, but I do not think she knew anything of



a trip to Europe by her father at the same time, tho I may be mistaken about this fact. He was not in active business when he took this trip, and owing to the number of persons involved at the time we may well understand the pertinence of the allusion to the cost of travel. What he says of his daughter is characteristic and represents a state of mind, which with the reference to the expense of travel, was not known to Mrs. Smead. There are also allusions which are too personal and private to explain in detail and which were absolutely unknown to Mrs. Smead. I have to suspend comment on them.

The allusion to the "house where he used to live" is equivocal. It might refer to the condition of the home he left at the time of his funeral, which would not be true in regard to its loneliness, tho the curtains were drawn. But his old home in a suburb of Philadelphia is still standing, owned by other parties, and I was told that it is not occupied. He was very fond of this place when he lived there, and it was at the time he took his European trip with the family.

The incident about the souvenirs is probably correct, tho I have no means of verifying it. It was known, if it occurred, only to my wife and himself.

He had no son by the name of George. But my little boy, George, named for him, was a favorite of his. Mrs. Smead knew the boy and his relation to my father-in-law.

---

April 10th, 1907.

10.15 a. m. Present Mr. S. and J. H. H.

[10.21 hand trembled, 10.23 writing began.]

[w]e are here, yes, ready, yes. [pause] [pencil kept moving about a point.] Get him ['him' read 'them.'] him. we will. [pause.]

[Change of control.]

do you know how much like mary's coming mine was.

(Yes, in some respects.)

it was with the head that I... [pencil broke; new one inserted.] refer to, you understand do you.

(Yes, I understand.) [pause.]

(Do you remember who were present at the time?) many were. (You mean on your side?)

no, [pause.] over there.

(When you can do so mention some one.)

it was my head snapped and I came soon after that [hand trembled.] [pause.] you no [know] know [pause.]. (Wait a moment.)

[It was apparent that the writing was very difficult and that the pressure on the pencil was great. So I resolved to change the sheet and tried to move the arm, but found it almost impossible to lift it. Evidences of marked catalepsy were present. I moved it upon the paper.]

what it was, yes.

(Don't press so hard on the hand.) [pause.] [writing more rapid and easy apparently.] well I wanted to tell you some one took me home [?] [pause.] to the house in a carriage, yes.

(You mean your own house?) [pause.] wait [Long pause.] [Hand moved toward my side of the paper and I held it a few moments.] there James it is hard to do it over. I was near a large high building. (Yes.) did they tell you about it.

(I know the high building.) [I thought of the tall building in which his office was situated.] [hand trembled.] yes, did you know. [pause.] what time I went to the place to [too] near it to go up stairs [pause.] but my business was not the same as it was once. I told you all about it before.

(Yes, I remember.)

I said clothes [written 'cloths' and so read when the hand went back and wrote 'es' over the 's.'] yes were a part of it. it was a large establishment in my own city, yes.

(That's good.)

I had woln [erased] woolen cloth lots of it James (Yes, Good.) and ladies came some to buy.

[Pencil moved partly across the page making scrawly marks.] on the cars, yes, I went that day James, I remember. [pause.] I no [know] you will remember about that store [pause.] (Yes.) [pause.] It was some years ago \* \* [some?] I liked to be there when mary came to it. yes. (Wait a moment.) [hand was going to superpose the writing.] it was (wait a moment.) [superposing again.] a Hall [pause.] O [pause.] A K C L O T H I N G. [read aloud to see if I got it rightly.] did not I tell you rightly yet. I... it did not seem that I heard you.

(I got the words: 'A Hall Oak Clothing.')

[hand trembled considerably.] \* \* \* \* oak Hall Clothing Company. (Good.) [scrawls.] yes that is right \* \* \* \* and you that time. [pause.] and [pause.] said I could [not read at time.] [pause.] I said I could that time. ['could' read 'would.'] could that, yes. [pause.]

That was a while ago, James.

(Yes, it was.)

[pause.] [hand trembling.] Mary came to see me trying, she said tell you we believe now [pencil turned in finger after 'n' was written.] all right.

(Do you remember what I said about that?)

at your house. (Yes.) you said I would have to believe here and I had better beore [before] I came [pencil ran off paper.] I came.

(Yes, that's right.)

If I had know [known] what you do I would have long ago, yes.

(Yes, I think so.)

[pause.] [hand trembling.] I will help you to now. (Good.) [pause.]

(Did we talk about this subject elsewhere?)

when I was there with you.

(Yes, in some other place than my house.)

you talked with me in my House and at the lakes [pause.] [trembling.] James, we talked much about it, this subject of living continually.

(Yes, we did. Do you remember the last summer where we talked about it on the mountain side?)

and ho [oh] yes I was agoing so [to] say it was under the trees. we walked where no one could hear us. (Yes.) I said I wished I could have proof of my Mary's living. (Yes.) I would then believe. [Hand moved over toward me and I held it for a while.] I do now. why did not you send me here.

(I wanted you to go to another case, but I could not get it.)

but I did not care [resembles 'come'] why did you not send me here.

(This case was not so well developed.)

I did not care so much \* \* [then?] I did not believe it so much then as you did. this is all right, James. (Yes.) I knew about it. I could have known more. I would have believed more yes. I know that place you said, but I know this better, and they do not let strangers much (wait a moment.) [superposing.] much such as I come there. I would come her [here] yes. they knew you and that is why they brought your friends there. (Yes.) they did not know me.

(Yes, I understand.)

[pause.] [hand trembling.] I can come here. the friends over here are willing and let me cone [come.]

(Have you met your children?)

[pause.] I said Mary came this morning to see me try.

(How is she?)

[pause.] Mary is allways [always] ready to work.

(Yes, I believe it) and the children are all right [pencil moved down the paper and then returned to the line.] one was more like me, yes, yes. I [erased.] she had her mother's ways, much like her. [pause.]

which children did you say, James. I have ween [been] wondering [wandering] away as if dreaming.

(I referred to your children that passed out long ago.)

I remembered Mary best. one was small (Yes.) so could not entere [erased.] enter much into my life.

(Yes, that's right.) but is all right.

(Yes, don't worry about that. I was only trying to help in your recollections.)

we will come again.

(Yes, the hour is up.) you know it is a tiresome way to try and live over our earth existence from here.

(Yes, I know it, but it is a great work.)

yes I know it now. Going to go and come again. George Washington Hall.

(That's right.)

Robert Hyslop.

(All right, father.)

we will come again to you.

(Yes, tomorrow.)

wait and we will see about it. [pause.] all right, we will come. (Good.)

So far as human observation is concerned there was no other resemblance between my wife's death and her father's than their suddenness at last. The physical difficulties were not the same. Mr. Hall was suddenly attacked by something resembling apoplexy, tho it was not this specifically, as his whole system was diseased, and had to be taken home in a carriage. He recovered from this, but was down again in a few days, not to gain his strength again, tho he went out in a carriage to some business twice afterward. His office was in a large building. The question whether they told me of this incident is pertinent, as it occurred just before his last illness and I lived in New York, he in Philadelphia.

It is true that his business at the time of his death was not the same as it had been earlier. He retired many years ago from the clothing and dry goods business, and simply managed his investments, which he had been doing almost ever since I knew him. He once told me what his business had

been, and a part of it was "drumming for his house." I take it that this is what is meant by his reference to his being on the cars. I do not know the name of the company. He never told me. It was only once when he was in a reminiscent mood that he told me about it. He was not in the habit of telling about his early life. He was rather a reticent man. I do not know whether his daughter Mary, my wife, was fond of going to see the store or not. If she did it was when she was very young.

The "we" in the statement "we believe now" is pertinent, as my wife did not believe in my views at the time of her death, tho growing sympathetic with my work. Mr. Hall never believed it in spite of our frequent talks about it. He was strongly opposed to my investigations and did all he could to discourage me in them. I often told him, and did so in my own house, that he would believe in it after he passed out, and that it would be better if he believed it before. The allusion to the lakes as a place we talked about the subject is correct, but it is possibly an attempt to get the mind on the next to last talk we had on the mountainside, which I had in mind when I asked my question. It was under two maple trees that we had the most serious talk about it, in which I told him not to fear death, that he would be glad when it was all over, and would agree with me then. It was our last talk on it and was two or three months before his illness and death.

One reason I had never brought him to this case was that, in his state of mind, and in my suit for an endowment, I felt that to do so would be a desire on my part to get money from him. His daughter once called for him in the Piper case, and as it was apparent to me that he was wanted to influence his mind on the financial question, I never mentioned it to him and refused to take any steps to that end. He was called for by her through another case also a short time before his death, but was unable to go.

The statement that strangers are not admitted at the other light is true for the Piper case, probably surmisable by Mrs. Smead.

I never heard him mention any of his other children ex-

cept his son Clarence, and him but once. His children by his first wife died in infancy, and most of those by his second wife also in infancy. Mary, my wife, was the one that entered so deeply into his life. His name was George Washington Hall. Only his name "Hall" was known to Mrs. Smead. She may have guessed that George was a part of it, but she had no ordinary means for ascertaining the other, except casual or intentional inquiry at my house when she stayed there. She once met Mr. Hall at my house, in 1900, and had a short conversation with him. He referred to his trip to Germany then and some cheese which he had when there, and to the fact that his daughter studied music there. That, Mrs. Smead says, is the limit of her knowledge of him. Her statements, barring lapses of memory, I think can be accepted, tho I shall not urge this view upon the sceptic. She says he never told her anything about his business, and I can readily believe this, as he was quite reticent even with me about this early period, tho he was very confidential and talkative about his later business matters. No allusion is made to these in the communications.

---

April 11, 1907.

10.20 a. m. Present Mr. S. and J. H. H.

[Writing began at 10.28.]

"we are here" [written so finely that I could read it only by watching the pencil at the time.] [pause.] Hall is coming. wait for us

(Yes, I'll wait.)

[pause.] wait. (Yes.) [hand trembling.] [Long pause.]

you know I cannot hurry much. I need to move slowly. my heart would not allow [allow] it so they said you would wait.

(Yes, that's right.)

yes, James do you know why I married the ['married' read married.] no, married the second time for.

(No, I never heard it. I would be glad to hear it.)

[hesitation.] then it would not help you.

(Word after 'the') ['then it' not read correctly.] then it would not help you.

(Yes I get it.) I thought to tell you would help [pause.]

[Apparently the communicator comes to learn that my ignorance of the fact is a reason for telling it, a psychological consideration, if rightly conjectured, shows a consciousness on the part of others present, especially my father who controls, that it will answer the telepathic objection.]

I was sorry not to have a son [pencil broke from heavy pressure. New one inserted.] my own wife so m [erased.] after she had gone to this life I married hoping to have a son that I could b... [pencil broke again: another given.] be proud of and would take up my same business. you understand me.

(Yes, I do and I am glad to know that as it clears up some things for me.)

[excitement in hand.] yes, I had thought to do it for that reason. Yes, but you know of but part of my disappointment and trouble.

(Yes, I understand. You need not say any more.) [pause.]

well we are ready to tell... [pencil broke.]

(You press too hard on the pencil.)

[pause.] and I hope to get it all cleared up now.

(Good, go ahead.)

I tell you frankly a m... [pencil ran off paper.] man can not be happy unless the other side is congenial, you see.

(Yes, that's right.) [pause.]

I [pause.] would say that some women know how to talk to [too] much.

(Yes, that's right.)

yes. [excitement.]

I want to know about the house.

(It is for sale.)

I do not want it sold, James.

(What do you wish?) the family to keep it, yes. I knew something was out of harmony there. I worked hard for it and I wanted it for the family. (Wait a moment.) [superposing.] to [erased.] so that they would always have a home

(Yes, but you know that the rent would be lost and only one can live in it now. Your son cannot live there now.)

why not. I know there is a small family, but it will grow and the house will not be too large.

(Yes, but his business is not there.)

he could go to it, yes, then his mother could alway [s] have a home to go to.

(You remember how you left the property and in whose hands.)

and, yes but I would change it some now. will they not listen.

(I think the law would not change for any message from your side.)



I know, I know that, but would they not be willing. I mean the mother and son. [pause.] no I suppose not. I do wish it though.

(Well...)

it was a pretty home and perhaps strangers will care for it.

(Yes, I...)

I like my lawns an [read 'on' and erased.] around it. I wish they would keep it and all things I had collected inside from visits, yes, the souvenirs I mean. I had som... [some] that my wife's that is here with me and we alway [always] liked to go and look at them together. we do now.

(Yes, I have some at my house of hers and yours.)

yes I know and they are given all an [erased.] around to friends. yes, I hope you... [pencil fixed and the hand came to my side of the paper where I held it for a few moments.] will keep then [them] from every earth influence for a while.

(Yes, I have packed them away.)

I like to go to them and fee... [feel] that they were what we had. yes, it helps to remember easier, James.

(Can you tell me what some of them were?)

not here now.

(All right.)

I would need to go to them first (All right.) [pause.] I understand now the change I have seen taking place. (Good.) [pause.] who has the pictures from the parlor.

(Son and mother.)

did not they give you one.

(No, and I would not ask.)

no, no, I know, but I wish I had told them to give you one.

(It is all right.)

you would have liked best (Wait a moment.) [pencil writing heavy and was changed.] [pause.] one that I called [written 'cal' and started to write 'e' when the hand turned back and made the second 'l' superposing it on the 'e.'] mary's, but [pause.] they will soon loose [lose] their charm for me now.

(Which one. Which picture was that?) [Thinking of two large paintings which I knew.]

If you had one I could have go... [either 'have' should have been erased or 'ne' has been omitted from 'go.'] back to much \*\* ['is?'] it and recalled memories of the room it was in. [pause.] it was a painting, James, oil one.

(Describe it if you can.)

of the lady a [When I read 'the lady' the hand went back and inserted 'a' above the line before 'lady.'] yes, very dear to me

(Good so far.)

and I wish you had it.

(Can you say any more about the lady?)

mine she was.

(Yes, I understand. Do you recall any other picture?)

[Thinking of the two large ones.]

of the daughter.

(That's good.)

[pause.] yes, it was right to be yours, yes.

(Well it may be yet.) yes, you will care well for it if they let you. (Yes.) keep it. (Yes, I will.) who would better care for it than the ones that love her best.

(That's right.)

I would ask [read 'wanted to ask.'] it I would [read 'wanted,' and hand erased.] I would [read 'wanted.'] no, I yes. [in answer to reading 'would.'] I would ask for it.

(Well, I will.)

that would be right. (Yes.) [pause.] Mary would have you have it.

(Yes, I understand.)

childhood memories for her would linger around the picture, yes, of the home of her mother [pause.]

(Yes, I shall try to get it without doubt.)

well I would tell you [pause.] there are strange feeling [s] when we return to see everything so changed. it upsets us, yes, if you could only have them stay awhile until we became adjusted [adjusted] to this side we could easier talk to you over there. that is one reason it is so difficult

(Yes, I understand.)

the quick changes, yes. [pause.] you [pause.] wait. (Yes, I will.) [pause.] I am tired. (Yes rest.) [pause, pencil changed. Hand relaxed a moment.]

we will help him, James, to come back. he was more affected tod. . today and it made him tired. (Yes) yes.

(Shall we meet tomorrow again?)

not more until after the Sabbath, James. it is not well.

(Well, father, I have to return home in order to conduct some experiments with another next week.)

well. . .

(Can you give me a word that I give here. You try and give me the words: [Words omitted.] Get it?)

[pause.] again louder. ([Words omitted.] is the sentence I wish you to give me in New York next week. Do you get it?) [Repeated slowly and distinctly.] [pause.]

[In a few moments Mrs. Smead sobbed slightly and soon came out of the trance, but went to sleep and had to be awakened by Mr. Smead. When she first recovered from the trance she called my attention to her left hand which was quite cataleptic.]

The allusion to his second marriage states a fact not known to me, but is pertinent and may never have been revealed to any one, if true. It would clear up to me some things that are very personal, and if the statement is true it removes the credibility of some things suspected. His second marriage proved a great trouble to him for many years, a fact not at all known to Mrs. Smead.

His attitude toward his house is not that which he had when living. He was anxious to sell it and did not expect it kept. There were no lawns around it. The house was a city house and opened on the street. There was a back yard covered with a brick pavement, but it had no lawn or grass in it. He had owned, until about 1893 or 1894, a house in a suburb of Philadelphia, of which he had been very fond and which had a fine set of lawns about it. The grounds were above the street and he has apparently referred to it at sittings with another medium. He sold this about the time indicated. Hence there is apparently some confusion about the matter, as well as indications of a mental attitude other than in life.

He had some important oil paintings in his parlor. In it also were a picture of my wife, which is here mentioned, and I think an oil painting of his first wife. Of this I am not quite certain. What is said about them the reader will recognize as pertinent. We might attribute the mention of them to pure guessing, and I should be inclined to this interpretation if there were any traces of this process in these sittings. He did have a large collection of souvenirs which he had gathered from his trips in various places.

On this date, October 22nd, Mrs. Smead wrote out an account of a vision which she had on the night before she started for New York. The following is the narrative.

"Before we went to bed the night previous to starting for New York, Mr. Smead and I were talking about my trip to New York for experiment, and I said that, if things did not go right this time, I would never try this thing again. Mr. Smead said I was wrong to say this. But I replied that I had made up my

mind that I would not do it again, if things went as they did before. He then remarked that I would get my warning all right.

Within an hour after we had gone to bed I saw a person step into the room for two or three steps and stood there with both arms down at the side, dressed in a white robe. Both the surplice and the gown were perfectly white instead of black. The surplice of the Episcopal gown of today is white. The apparition then raised up his arms, as if in the attitude of worship, and moving them upward in a straight line, curved them together as if blessing me. The palms of the hand were turned outward at first and were turned in as if announcing the benediction. Then the form disappeared. I told Mr. Smead of it in the morning and he remarked, well, you got your warning all right. I noticed at the time that the experience had a quieting influence. I did not feel any more doubts about the trip."

In response to inquiries of Mr. Smead whether he remembered the incident and its details, without telling him what Mrs. Smead recorded, he replies:—

"I remember very well Mrs. S. telling me about the vision of the priest in the white robe; the details I cannot recall. I am sorry, but I do not wish to guess at them; what she tells you of the details you can trust. Her memory of them will be very near right I am sure."

But for the date of recording the fact this incident should precede the record. But it came to me when I remarked to Mrs. Smead that the sittings were good ones and so stands in the order of its recording.

---

### EXPLANATION OF THE AUTOMATIC WRITING.

Readers of this record will probably be helped in their appreciation of the phenomena by a more definite knowledge of the automatic writing. To give a clear conception of what this is I publish in *fac simile* the entire sitting of October 20th. I choose this one because of several characteristics which make it psychologically interesting. There is first the effect of the old planchette habit of writing. As I have said in the Introduction, Mrs. Smead began her work in automatic writing with the planchette. This does not permit

the separation of words entirely. They may be made discontinuous or intentionally so by drawing lines before beginning a new word. This sometimes occurs in this form of automatic writing. But it is impossible to eliminate the connecting line in such work, and so it appears to confuse the interpretation in many instances.

Some years ago Mrs. Smead gave up the planchette and used the pencil instead, but for a long time the writing remained continuous precisely as if done by the planchette, and it often takes this form still, especially with certain communicators. The tendency to separate the words seems to have grown with the reproduction of the methods of the work connected with Mrs. Piper and the apparent presence of persons associated with it. In this instance the reader will remark that the automatic writing began with the planchette type, namely, with the continuous writing and only gradually developed into the discontinuous. This discontinuous writing was especially easy and conspicuous after I had placed the pencil in Mrs. Smead's hands as my father had held it in life. The writing at once became perfectly calm and deliberate. There was no apparent nervousness or difficulty in connection with it, and the only difference between it and normally controlled writing was the slow and deliberate movement of the hand. It was more deliberate and self-controlled than in the Piper case.

One thing I should remark, and it is that the obliquity of the lines across the page is exactly as it occurs in the automatic writing of Mrs. Piper. This was not so often apparent in the older days of Mrs. Smead's work, and especially when she used the planchette. But as soon as the mechanical methods of the Piper writing were reproduced, this obliquity in the lines made their appearance, and *Mrs. Smead today knows nothing about this fact*. She has never seen any of the original manuscripts of the Piper writing. There are occasionally resemblances in the spelling of words and more especially in the use of certain phrases in the two cases. But perhaps more often the habits and idiosyncracies of the automatic writer prevail. This will limit the resemblances and possibly make them less conspicuous and significant.

But it would require a long discussion and many illustrations to bring out this feature of the two cases, and I mention it at all only to remark that it is a characteristic which may be a subject of future observation and comment.

One thing I should emphasize for the sake of those who misinterpret the nature of these phenomena. It is not claimed that the writing is by spirits even when it is supposed that the information comes from such a source. It is conceded that the automatic writing is a product of the physical organism through which it is effected. The part that outside agencies may have in it, if they have any at all, we do not know. But it is certain that, even on the supposition that the information originates from discarnate personalities, the writing possesses so many mechanical characteristics of the organism through which it is done, bearing the marks of Mrs. Smead's normal habits, not her conscious actions, that we must concede an important part of the phenomena to the processes which are automatically active in all human writing. The problem of the psychical researcher centers around the contents of the communications and not about the mechanical features of it.

For understanding the phenomena represented in this *fac simile* reproduction of the automatic writing, the reader should compare it with the detailed record. Without this comparison it will not readily exhibit the psychological peculiarities marked by the various comments indicated by the detailed record. It will be apparent to students of psychology how important it is to observe and record all the little physiological and psychological incidents which accompany such phenomena, incidents whose existence would not even be suspected in the ordinary reports of them and which show more than anything else the limitations under which such investigations have to be conducted.

The first cuts represent a sample of Mrs. Smead's normal handwriting, and are taken from a letter written to my housekeeper regarding an experience which she had returning home. The automatic writing follows in its place.

# INDEX

Names of authors of articles and of signed contributions are printed in SMALL CAPITALS.

- Abnormal psychology, The field of ..... 18, 25  
Aetiogenetic defined..... 172  
Causes ..... 176n, 181, 188  
Aksakof, M., Examination of evidence given by, of a case of partial dematerialization ..... 131-168  
American Institute for Scientific Research, History of (J. H. Hyslop)..... 1-22  
Chartered ..... 3  
Addressed by Dr. J. D. Quackenbos ..... 4  
Address of R. Heber Newton ..... 5-8  
Of Dr. W. D. Bayley..... 8-17  
Meetings of, at the Waldorf-Astoria ..... 18-20  
Prospectus of the..... 23-73  
General plan..... 25-29  
Charter ..... 29-31  
Letters of indorsement..... 32-49  
Miscellaneous testimonies..... 49-52  
Original letter of Dr. Pierre Janet ..... 53-73  
Andros, Mrs., Exhibitions of somnambulism by..... 124-126  
Animal magnetism, Mesmer and, 11  
Letter on, to Dr. A. Bingham (WILLIAM L. STONE), 77-130  
Apparitions, Appearance of... 251-253  
Automatic writing... 263, 273-294, 298  
Explanations of the..... 720-722  
Done by Mrs. Smead with the planchette..... 536, 720-721  
B, Mr., Communication to... 647-648  
B, Mrs., Communications to, 552-554  
575, 590-592  
In detailed record.. 607-609, 618-623, 653-656, 695-699  
Baldwin, J. Mark, Letter of indorsement ..... 43  
Balfour, Arthur J., on psychical research ..... 50-51  
Bank of England and the McCaffrey case... 310-330, 362-363  
BAYLEY, Dr. WESTON D., Some Facts in Mesmerism..... 8-17  
Beliefs, So-called superstitions, of the past, vindicated.... 6-7  
Benedict, W. R., Letter of indorsement ..... 40-41  
Boldt, Mr., on the d'Esperance séance ..... 159, 164  
Bourne, Mr. and Mrs. C. G..... 4  
Honorary founders of the American Institute for Scientific Research..... 22  
Brackett, Loraina, Case of, and animal magnetism..... 84-114  
Blind ..... 84-85  
Tests of..... 87-111  
Reader of sealed letters... 112-114  
Ideal visit of, to hall of Franklin Society, Providence ..... 121-122  
Braid, James, and hypnotism... 12  
Brain, Functions of the..... 184-186  
BRIGHAM, Dr. A., Letter to W. L. Stone..... 79-80  
Brownell, Dr., cases of somnambulism reported by..... 126-129  
Butler, Nicholas Murray, Letter of indorsement..... 40  
C, Mr., Communications to... 688-694  
Capron, Dr. George, physician to Miss Brackett..... 84  
Carnegie Institute, Unsuccessful appeals to the..... 2  
Carpenter, G. R., Letter of indorsement ..... 45  
CARRINGTON, HEReward, An Examination and Analysis of the Evidence for Dematerialization, in M. Aksakof's Book..... 131-168



## Index.

- Report of Personal Investigation into Case of alleged movement of physical objects without contact...482-519  
 Reply to Mr. X's criticism, 516-519  
 Statement concerning Mrs. LeM .....638-640  
 Causal nexus between physical and mental phenomena, Is there a?.....170-180  
 Cause, Discussion of.....170-181  
     Twofold conception of.....173  
 Charcot and neurosis.....12-13  
 Charter of the American Institute for Scientific Research.....29-31  
 Clairvoyance, Case of Miss Lorraine Brackett (W. L. STONE) .....84-114  
     Cases of.....120-123, 126-129  
     Case of Mrs. Andros.....124-126  
 Clairvoyance, A case of (WILLIAM JAMES).....221-236  
 Clarke, Harrison, alleged spirit control.....526-527, 535-536  
 Common sense a discarded authority .....207  
 Compton, Elias, Letter of indorsement .....41-42  
 Confusions and errors in records, Illustrations of, examined 582-587  
 Consciousness a function of the brain the doctrine of materialism .....184  
     Discussion of....188-198, 208-220  
 Conservation of energy represents causal action.....171  
 Controls in case of Mrs. Smead, 535-543  
 Convulsionnaires de St. Médard.. 82  
 Covell, Stephen, Letter of, *in re* Miss Brackett.....113  
 Crookes, Sir Wm., on psychical research .....49  
 Crystal gazing.....254, 260, 294  
  
 Dematerialization, An Examination and Analysis of the Evidence for, in M. Aksakof's Book (H. CARRINGTON) .....131-168  
 DePuysegur and his patients.... 11  
 Dessoir, Max, Letter of indorsement .....32-33  
 Development and controls in case of Mrs. Smead.....535-543  
  
 Dogmatism of Science, The, and the Undiscovered Country (Dr. R. H. NEWTON)..... 5-8  
 Drake, Mrs., and the McCaffrey case.....352-355, 368  
 Dramatic play of personality...590-593  
  
 Edson, Cyrus, Letter of indorsement ..... 35  
 Emanation, The theory of..... 15  
 Endowment, Possible conditions of ..... 28  
 Epistemological theories..... 202  
 Equivalence, Causes and effects interpreted in terms of, 173-175, 192-193  
 Esperance, Madam d', began mediumship under supervision of Mrs. Mellon, the impostor ..... 134  
     Medium in case of partial dematerialization ..... 134  
 Evidential and non-evidential matter .....572-573  
 Experiences, A Record of (G. A. T.) .....237-300  
  
 Fac-simile of automatic writing, sitting of October 20th.... 723  
 Flammarion, Camille, Letter of indorsement .....44-45  
 Fluid hypothesis, The.....15-17  
 Fox sisters, Career of the..... 75  
 Fragmentary messages.....587-590  
 Fund for preliminary organization secured..... 20  
  
 Galindo, Gen., on the d'Esperance séance.....135n  
 Gardiner, H. N., Letter of indorsement .....37-39  
 General plan of organization...25-29  
 Genetic theories..... 202  
 George III, King, in the McCaffrey case.....304, 324, 362  
 Gleason, Miss, pupil of M. Poyen 81  
 Grant, Mr., Experiments of, in animal magnetism.....120-121  
 Greene, Daniel, Magnetizing powers of.....120, 129-130  
  
 H., Mrs., Communication to...563-564  
     In detailed record.....656-659  
 Hall, Rev. E. B., Experiments of, in animal magnetism, 121-123, 126  
 Hall, George W., Death of foretold ..... 544  
     Illness and death of.....545-547  
     Apparition of..... 548

# Index.

- Communications from....548-552,  
700-720
- Hertzberg, Dr., on the d'Esper-  
ance séance..... 149
- Higgy, Thomas, Death of, by  
hanging.....373-386, 427-428
- HJELT, VERA, Letter of, to Mons.  
Aksakof, describing case of  
partial dematerialization...  
136-142, 160, 163
- Hodgson, Dr., Experimental test  
arranged with.....539-541
- Communications from...565, 577-  
578, 613
- Huse, Bertha, Body of, found by  
clairvoyance .....221-231
- Huxley on a spiritual world....51-52
- Hypnotic suggestion, Topics of  
address on, by Dr. J. D.  
Quackenbos ..... 4-5
- Hypnotism, Mystery of.....9-10, 17
- James Braid and..... 12
- Has positive value..... 40
- Hypocrisy, A concrete case of... 242
- HYSLOP, JAMES HERVEY, History  
of the American Institute  
for Scientific Research....1-22
- On abnormal psychology....18-19
- On psychic research.....19-20
- Prospectus of the American  
Institute for Scientific Re-  
search .....23-73
- On Letter of W. L. Stone...73-76
- Parallelism and Materialism,  
169-220
- Introduction to Record of  
Experiences .....237-239
- The McCaffrey case.....301-430
- Review of J. Maxwell's *Meta-  
psychical phenomena*....520-524
- Statement concerning Mrs.  
LeM. ....640-641
- HYSLOP, JAMES HERVEY and H.  
CARRINGTON, A case of the  
alleged movement of phys-  
ical bodies without con-  
tact .....431-516
- Hyslop, Mrs. James H., Commu-  
nications from, 544-546, 551, 564,  
568-570, 574-576
- In detailed record...596-607, 610-  
612, 629-631, 694-695, 713
- Hyslop, Robert, Communications  
from....546, 549, 570-571, 576-  
579, 590-592
- In detailed record...613-618, 623-  
628, 629-630, 634-636
- Idealism not carefully defined by  
certain writers..... 182
- Subjective and objective..... 195
- Immortality coming within the  
ken of scientific demon-  
stration ..... 8
- Old belief in, growing faint.. 48
- Use of the term.....199n
- Not guaranteed by idealism,  
200-203
- Does parallelism affirm?...203-205
- Can it be established?..... 208
- Imperator group, Failure of test  
as to presence of.....539-542
- Incidents of an evidential char-  
acter .....568-572
- Incorporators of the American  
Institute for Scientific Re-  
search ..... 3
- Intelligence the primary duty in  
examining ostensible claims  
of "spirits," ..... 543
- JAMES, WILLIAM, Letter of in-  
dorsement .....33-34
- A case of Clairvoyance...221-236
- JANET, Dr. PIERRE, Original letter  
of indorsement from....53-73
- Janet's Pierre, Les Obsessions et  
la psychasthenie*.....37-38
- JEWETT, F. N., Letters in the Mc-  
Caffrey case...305-323, 335-341,  
350-358, 364-368, 423-424
- Joan of Arc, Clairvoyance of.... 6
- Kemp, J. F., Letter of indorse-  
ment ..... 47
- KENNEDY, Dr. HARRIS, Summary  
of a case of clairvoyance,  
221-231
- King's College, Happenings in  
student's room at.....468-471
- Knopff, S. A., Letter of indorse-  
ment .....35-36
- L., Mrs., Communication to...645-648,  
651-652
- Lang, Andrew, Letter of indorse-  
ment ..... 51
- Lange on materialism.....182-183
- LeM., Mrs. E. B., Statements of,  
635-638
- Of H. Carrington and J. H.  
Hyslop concerning.....638-641
- As one of the lights...648-650,  
662-663
- Letters of indorsement.....32-49
- Lindley, E. H., Letter of indorse-  
ment .....43-44

# Index.

- Lodge, Sir Oliver, on a future life ..... 49
- Lucretian materialism ..... 204-213
- M., Mr. G. L., Communications to ..... 629-633
- Experiences of Mrs. LeM. at visits of ..... 636-641, 648-650
- McCaffrey case, The (JAMES H. HYSLOP) ..... 301-430
- Introduction ..... 301-305
- Newspaper accounts ..... 325-331
- Questions and answers ..... 341-344, 368-370
- Conclusion ..... 417-430
- McCaffrey, Michael, Answers to questions while in hypnotic state ..... 388-410
- McMillan, D. H. B., Letters from, in Higgy case ..... 373-374
- Magnetism, Case of partial ..... 129-130
- Magnetism, *see also* Animal Magnetism.
- Materialism, Parallelism and (JAMES H. HYSLOP) ..... 169-220
- Definition of, not easy ..... 181-185
- Not carefully defined by certain writers ..... 182
- Lucretian ..... 204-213
- Maxwell's, J., *Metapsychical phenomena*, Review of (J. H. HYSLOP) ..... 520-524
- Mellon, Mrs., detected in deliberate imposture ..... 133
- Mental medicine, Possibilities of ..... 8
- Mesmerism, Some Facts in (WESTON D. BAYLEY) ..... 8-17
- Metaphysical theories ..... 202
- Method of difference applied to isolation of consciousness, ..... 209-210
- Mind and consciousness, terms made to do double duty ..... 215n
- Monistic theory, Tendency to favor the ..... 178
- Names, Difficulty with proper ..... 581
- Nancy, The School of, and suggestion ..... 12-13, 14
- Neurosis and psychosis ..... 169
- Newbold, W. Romaine, Letter of indorsement ..... 36-37
- NEWTON, Dr. R. HEBER, The Dogmatism of Science and the Undiscovered Country ..... 5-8
- Normal explanations must be admitted before resorting to supernormal ..... 572
- Objects, Alleged movement of physical, without contact (J. H. HYSLOP and H. CARRINGTON) ..... 431-519
- Ontogenetic defined ..... 172
- Causes ..... 176n, 181, 188
- P., Mrs., Communication to ..... 557-558
- In detailed record ..... 677-681
- Parallelism and Materialism; or, The Relation between Mental and Physical Phenomena (J. H. HYSLOP) ..... 169-220
- Foundations of ..... 198
- Personality, Dramatic play of ..... 590-593
- Personality, secondary, Case of apparent action of ..... 540
- Phenomena, Points of view from which to study ..... 201
- Physical objects, Case of alleged movement of, without contact ..... 431-519
- Report of personal investigation of (H. CARRINGTON), ..... 482-519
- Pierce, A. H., Letter of indorsement ..... 46-47
- Planchette, Message received through a ..... 244-245
- Automatic writing done with, by Mrs. Smead ..... 536, 720-721
- Planchette writing, Association of raps with ..... 243-244
- Poyen, Monsieur, and animal magnetism ..... 81-82
- Preliminary report on the trance phenomena of Mrs. Smead (J. H. HYSLOP) ..... 525-722
- Prospectus of the American Institute for Scientific Research (JAMES H. HYSLOP) ..... 23-76
- Psychic research, The duties of, ..... 432-433
- Psychical research, Field of ..... 25, 27, 28-39, 41
- Prejudice against ..... 38-39, 41
- Psychics, Marvelousness of the finds in the realms of ..... 5
- Psychological verisimilitudes ..... 572-580
- Psychometry, The power known as ..... 7
- Psychopathology, Field of, 25-26, 29, 38
- Putnam, James J., Letter of indorsement ..... 34
- Quackenbos, Dr. John D., Topics of address of, on "The Philosophy and Therapeutic

# Index.

- Value of Hypnotic Suggestion, ..... 4-5
- Quentin, Mrs., A sitting with..... 549
- Communications to..... 554-565
- In detailed record, 641-645, 660-664
- Raps with planchette writing... 243-244
- Various kinds of. 253-290, 294-300
- Rattan factory at Windsor, N. S.,
- Happenings in the..... 460-465
- Report of investigation into, ..... 488-504
- Record of Experiences (G. A. T.) ..... 237-300
- Reichenbach's, Baron, experiments with luminous emanations.. 15
- Richet, Charles, Letter of indorsement ..... 32
- Robertson, D. M., Letters in McCaffrey case.... 376-380, 388-410
- Salpêtrière, The, under Charcot and Janet..... 1, 26, 38
- Sanford, E. C., Letter of indorsement ..... 47
- Savage, Minot J., Letter of indorsement ..... 48-49
- Schultz, Mr., Testimony of, in case of partial dematerialization.... 149-151, 158, 164, 166
- Sederholm, Gen., on the d'Esperance séance... 151, 156-157, 160
- Seership, A supernormal faculty of ..... 235
- Seiling, Prof., Testimony of, in case of partial dematerialization. 144-149, 155-156, 163-167
- Seybert Commission, Report of the, had a wholesome effect upon fraud..... 19
- Smead, Mrs., Preliminary report on the trance phenomena of (J. H. Hyslop)..... 525-722
- Introduction ..... 525-535
- Brought to New York for experiments ..... 527-528
- Precautions taken..... 529-531
- Sitters not known to..... 528-532
- The trance..... 533
- Development and controls in case of..... 535-543
- Harrison Clarke..... 535-536
- Imperator and Luther.... 537-539
- Chesterfield ..... 538-542
- Experimental test with Dr. Hodgson ..... 539-541
- Summary of the record... 543-568
- Illness of G. W. Hall communicated by Mrs. Hyslop, ..... 544-546
- By Mrs. Hyslop's father.. 546-547
- Communications from G. W. Hall ..... 548-552
- To Mrs. B... 552-554, 575, 590-592, 607-609, 618-623
- To Mrs. Quentin.. 554-555, 641-645
- To Mrs. X..... 555-556
- To Mrs. P..... 557-558
- To Mrs. Z..... 558-562
- To Mrs. H..... 563-564
- To Mr. M..... 564-566, 629-633
- Failures at sittings..... 566-568
- Incidents of evidential character ..... 568-572
- Psychological verisimilitudes, ..... 572-580
- More difficulty and confusion than in Piper case... 580-581
- Confusions and errors.... 582-587
- Fragmentary messages.... 587-590
- Dramatic play of personality ..... 590-593
- Detailed record..... 594-720
- Visions seen by..... 650-660, 697
- Communications from G. W. Hall ..... 700-720
- Smith, Goldwin, on a future state, 52
- Somnambulism, Cases of..... 120-129
- Exhibitions of, by Mrs. Andros ..... 124-126
- Another case of..... 126-129
- Spencer, Herbert, Confusion in philosophy of..... 173
- Spiritism strangely revived..... 7
- Spirits, Belief in the actual communication of, with the living ..... 7
- Spiritual world, Huxley on a... 51-52
- STONE, WILLIAM LEETE, Letter to Dr. A. Brigham on Animal Magnetism ..... 77-130
- J. H. Hyslop on, with sketch of author..... 73-76
- Sullivan, Michael J., Statement of, as to finding body in case of clairvoyance.... 228-231
- Sunderlin, W. R., Statement in case of clairvoyance.... 224-225
- Supernormal phenomena, First distinction to be drawn in investigating ..... 19-20
- Supernormal theory, Explanations precedent to..... 534-535

## Index.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <p>Symbols used in making the record .....594n</p> <p>T—, GEORGE A., A Record of Experiences .....237-300</p> <p>Taps on face and head.....255-257</p> <p>Gentle brushing.....269-273</p> <p>Tavaststjerna, Miss, on the d'Esperance séance.....149, 156</p> <p>Telepathy an actual power..... 6</p> <p>Absolutely proved..... 44</p> <p>Instances of.....248-249</p> <p>Explanations precedent to, 534-535</p> <p>Tertullian, The philosophic doctrine of.....203n, 216-218</p> <p>Titus, George N., Story of Case of clairvoyance.....225-227</p> <p>Toppelius, Capt., on the d'Esperance séance..143-144, 156, 160, 164</p> <p>Trance Phenomena of Mrs. Smead, Preliminary Report on the (J. H. HYSLOP).....525-722</p> <p>Introduction .....525-535</p> <p>Development and Controls, 535-543</p> <p>Summary of the record...543-568</p> <p>Miscellaneous incidents...568-572</p> <p>Psychological verisimilitudes, 572-587</p> <p>Fragmentary messages....587-590</p> | <p>Dramatic play of personality, 590-593</p> <p>Detailed record.....594-720</p> <p>Explanation of the automatic writing .....720-722</p> <p>Unity, Ontological and nomological ..... 173</p> <p>Waldorf-Astoria meetings.....18-20</p> <p>Webb, Thomas H., Letter on case of partial magnetism....129-130</p> <p>Whitney, George, Letter on case of clairvoyance.....227-228</p> <p>Windsor, N. S., Alleged movement of physical objects without contact at.....431-481</p> <p>Windsor, N. S., Statements concerning alleged manifestations in.....448-457</p> <p>X., Mrs., Communications to...555-559</p> <p>In detailed record.....664-677</p> <p>X's, Mr., Reports from Windsor, N. S.....437-446, 450</p> <p>His final report with criticism of H. Carrington..454-460</p> <p>Frauds practised on.....500-510</p> <p>Z., Mrs., Communications to...558-562</p> <p>In detailed record.....681-688</p> |
|---|---|

## ERRATA.

- Part I., pp. 73-6—The "Letter of William Stone" should be read as part of the Document which commences on p. 77. It is an Introduction to that Letter.
- Part I., p. 216—Lines 7-8 read "Materialism" for "Mystericalism."
- Part II., p. 238—Line 28 omit the words "other the."
- CONTENTS.....

593  
720

723

175

4-20

130

228

481

452

556

677

450

420

516

4-500

688

rt of  
that

Dear Mrs B

As I promised I will write  
a good deal since I returned, not because I want  
to. I must tell you of my experience coming.  
my sister did not meet me as I expected and  
meet her if I went out to Sullivan Sq. so  
and waited but she did not come and I  
to the hotel. after I had put Billy to bed  
could not for that Blue Light. and my head  
12 or 1 o'clock. I asked the influence to help me  
asleep and did not wake until 5:30 A.M. Thus  
the N. Station as I had planned; every thing went



Apr. 1906

write tonight. I have rested quite a  
I wanted to but because I have had  
ing home. When I arrived in Boston  
and I thought perhaps I would  
so took the Elevated Care for there  
I then went back to Boston and  
led I tried to go to sleep myself but  
head shaking and finally about  
me rest and in a few minutes I was  
Thursday morning. I took the train from  
went all night until the train left

La Grange. Then this Blue Light returned and was almost continually near me until I left the train at Millinocket. I was passing down the steps, and was on the second one going down when a voice spoke to me and said "You are a going to fall." I was very careful, on the next step and when on the last one I was just a going to step on the platform when my left foot slipped down between the car and platform depriving my right foot my left limb is all black & blue. I had Billy in my arms and the boy and when the voice spoke I of course tried to save him from getting hurt (which I did) one gentleman took him while two others helped me up.

If I had not seen the crowd coming I would have fainted but I was helped in to the carriage and home; and that is why I

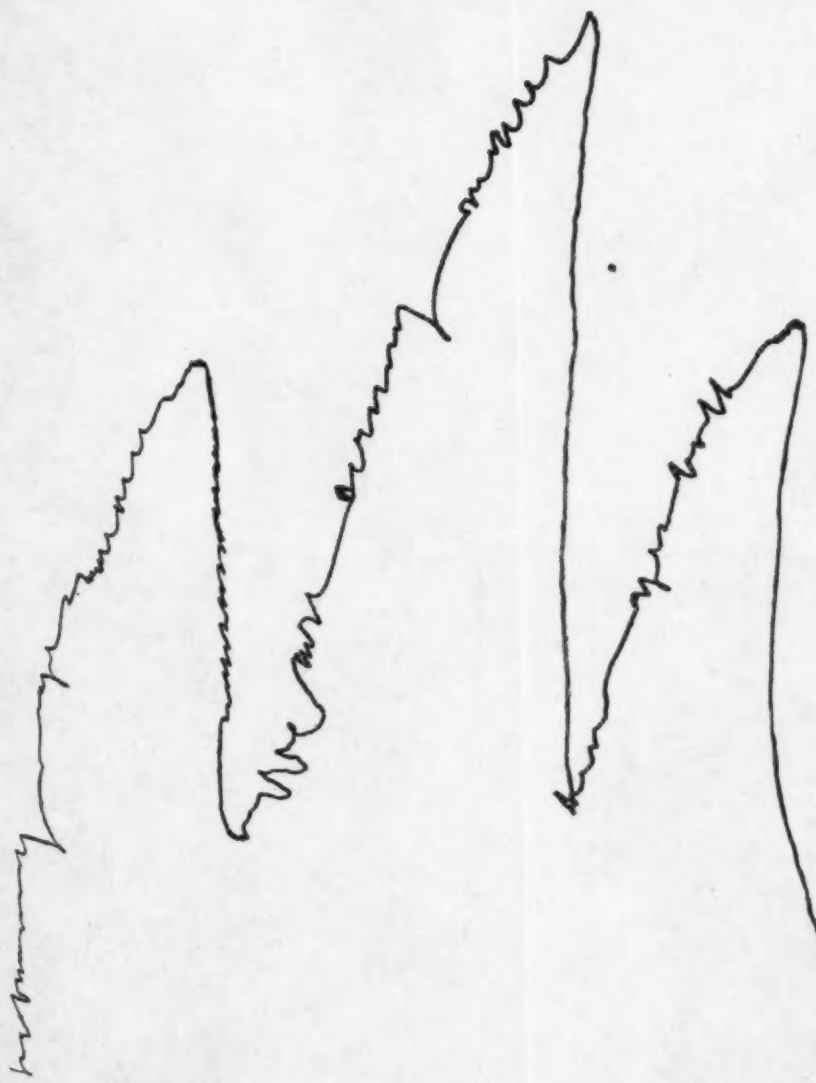
would have failed but I was obliged to  
to the carriage and home; and that is why I  
have rested: so when two days before I left  
home for A. G. Stodd Mr. C. that I would meet  
with an accident if I was not killed before  
I returned was true altho he thought at the  
time I told him it was because I was afraid  
to go, and said it was cowardly for me to feel  
afraid now he says: that in some way  
I knew more about it than he supposed  
I could.

I suppose Dr. Hyslop will want the  
account and if he wishes to know if  
it can be verified there were the ~~travellers~~

1906

Feb 20

10.42



10.42

44 car share morning

44 share morning

afternoon

Subtrahend

Complement

agencies

12

12 12

12 12

12 12

12 12



near most pen

sharpener for

corn hammer fans

candy cracker

Dear Mr  
Gentle  
I am  
very  
much  
obliged  
to  
you  
for  
the  
information  
you  
have  
given  
me  
concerning  
the  
same.

Success bound with

when with friends

do the work you do.

Henry

young crane at home

young crane at home

at home

~~I did not~~ ~~but~~

~~the~~ ~~me~~ ~~now~~ ~~that~~

~~yes~~

stop  
many many  
many many  
I did - oh -

Democrat was  
men but I

men had my  
had my men



6.  
Gentle James

A woman I was  
on earth -  
- I held it

my first finger  
and thumb

not the  
the way

for you know now

that is the

the way I wanted was  
it. I did my writing carefully

James. I did not like  
to hurry through

life. now now we  
have to hurry so  
when we come back  
we have

or better time

to use

- yes

but I am trying

my patience to control and

to see if I can  
not do more and better  
for you  
Thank you ... do you

you not;  
some one  
spoke to me quickly  
and almost lost my car  
hol - .



Your friend  
~~can't~~ to <sup>for staying</sup> try it the way  
he and to keep cool  
work slowly and  
more could be  
rightly -

ool  
d in the end  
be accomplished  
- it is very

hard not to want to say all at once

no I like my own  
things best  
I will go away and then go  
now and I will  
Hurry

you  
- come back

is so ~~much~~

Hodgson is so kind about helping

is not understanding these

newways yes.

he said that when we were over  
any time to talk (to you sometimes  
did not get it what me  
I mean - so

me said  
to I will try to  
help further — you know  
how hard that will be for  
me

at that other light I used  
to get very nervous and frequently

had to leave

you to get on  
not of myself -



try here not to do it -  
so I will

Mary was sorry she could not

stay with you but as

I know she would be

when she knew that we  
could really talk so  
everyone to have you know  
it says I know the  
could

ad not come - the lady  
we do not

work on this day

day

it is better not

as you know

the preparation for  
the 8 abstinence  
he - and me all  
on that day -  
my str -

shut - I was  
about it  
when you were a boy

didn't not like you

to do work on the Lord's

Dear

and we still have our  
dearer to do right  
every thing that can  
be done it  
of res

should

is our day

reset

! but we get

accustomed to our ways

of working and that is

it



do

you think I shall  
soon get my earthly  
humble changed so that  
so that when  
will  
men

or (habits)

I return they

not be as  
remains of the past

should be.

not I --  
just

I always had the  
care of boys of  
special  
for the  
"

long lake  
of their clothes and  
ally them tools -  
the 8 abath -  
"

when it was not pleasant  
that we could go to the  
meeting house. I used to  
read the sermons at  
for the family. I  
the illness. I  
gathered

gathered for worship in  
my room at home.

your remember James.

Not just like this

love.

I always - ~~but~~ ~~there~~  
the family  
Lap  
my while I read on my  
see what the from in  
what you as corner  
the light was  
had



to at your  
were the Dargunah  
half past five I did not wait

upon all of it then  
I must go now

It is here -

I shall come

with Mary on  
on the first day  
after at

of our age  
a long  
for our  
Landscape  
in  
Landscape

When I wrote

whether she

had better ~~want~~ - shall

5 - 2000 / 5

✓ ~~read~~ Shall

Lyndon

draw



**Proceedings**  
OF  
**The Old American Society**  
FOR  
**Psychical Research**

**Vol. 1. 1885-89.**

**Price \$2.50 (prepaid)**

We have purchased nearly 100 copies of the *Proceedings* of the American Society before it was merged in the American Branch of the English Society and shall be glad to supply them to any one at the price named. They contain important articles by Prof. Pierce, Prof. Pickering, Prof. Minot, Prof. Royce, Dr. Hodgson, and Prof. James, with a collection of experiments on Telepathy and cases of spontaneous apparitions, premonitions, clairvoyance, etc. Copies can be had by ordering from the Secretary.

---

**THREE USEFUL BOOKS ON PSYCHICAL RESEARCH.**

By EDWARD T. BENNETT, Ass't Sec. of the English Society for Psychical Research, 1882-1902.

**THE SOCIETY FOR PSYCHICAL RESEARCH:** Its Rise and Progress and a Sketch of Its Work.

Chapters on: The Society for Psychical Research; Telepathy; Suggestion; Hypnotism; Psychic Healing; The Subliminal Self; Apparitions and Hauntings; Evidence of the Existence of Intelligences other than the Living, and of the Reality of Intercommunication.

**TWENTY YEARS OF PSYCHICAL RESEARCH:** 1882-1901.

Chapters on: Twenty Years of Psychical Research; The Work Accomplished; Evidence of the Phenomena—Groups I, II, III, Conclusions. List of Reference Books dealing with the subject-matter treated.

**AUTOMATIC SPEAKING AND WRITING:—A STUDY.**

Chapters on: Automatic Speaking and Writing; Communications in which definite facts are stated, or in which information is conveyed unknown by any normal means to the speaker or writer; Communications in which the intelligence claims to give evidence of its identity with a deceased person; Communications, the chief interest of which consists in their Character; The Sources of the Communications; Conclusions; List of Books, etc., dealing with this subject.

We recommend these little books as very useful for conversion purposes: to give persons uninterested or ignorant of the work that has been done in this field. These books can be supplied to members, post-paid, for 40c. each. All orders filled from the offices of the Society, 519 West 149th Street, New York City.



# Proceedings

## OF THE

# American Society

## FOR

# Psychical Research

*Vol. 1. Part 1.*

### CONTENTS

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| <b>HISTORY OF THE AMERICAN INSTITUTE FOR SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH :—</b>   |     |
| Introduction by James Hervey Hyslop .....   | 1   |
| Address by Dr. R. Heber Newton: "The Dogmatism of Science<br>and the Undiscovered Country" .....                                    | 5   |
| Address by Dr. Weston D. Bayley: "Some Facts in Mesmerism," .....   | 8   |
| Summary of later meetings and conclusion .....  | 18  |
| <b>PROSPECTUS OF THE AMERICAN INSTITUTE FOR SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH ..</b>  | 23  |
| <b>LETTER ON ANIMAL MAGNETISM, by William L. Stone .....</b>  | 73  |
| <b>AN EXAMINATION OF MONS. AKSAKOF'S "CASE OF PARTIAL DEMATERI-<br/>ALIZATION OF A MEDIUM'S BODY," by Hereward Carrington .....</b> | 131 |
| <b>PARALLELISM AND MATERIALISM, by James H. Hyslop .....</b>  | 169 |

*Vol. 1. Part II.*

### CONTENTS

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| <b>A CASE OF CLAIRVOYANCE. By Prof. William James .....</b>  | 221 |
| <b>A RECORD OF EXPERIENCES. By G. A. T. :—</b>   |     |
| Introduction .....   | 237 |
| Author's Narrative .....   | 239 |
| <b>THE McCaffery Case. By James H. Hyslop.</b>   |     |
| Introduction .....   | 301 |
| Data and Investigation .....   | 301 |
| Hypnotic Experiments .....   | 308 |
| Conclusion .....   | 417 |
| <b>A CASE OF THE ALLEGED MOVEMENT OF PHYSICAL OBJECTS WITHOUT<br/>CONTACT. By James H. Hyslop and Hereward Carrington.</b> |     |
| Introduction .....   | 431 |
| Mr. X's Reports .....  | 437 |
| Report of a Personal Investigation Into These Phenomena .....  | 482 |
| Reply to Mr. X's Criticism .....   | 516 |
| <b>BOOK REVIEW .....</b>   | 520 |

